

A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

FOR USE IN SCHOOLS

KY

FREDERIC SWANN

DORMAN'S HANDMAINES OF THE GRADMIE SCHOOL WEREA.
I NO WE WAS LEADIN BY SHILLE THOO.

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO
39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LOYDON
NEW YORK, LOWBAY, AND CALCUTTA

1913

A I rights stanned

TO

THE THRLE Ms

PARGINES STREET IN OF GPA.

THE CHILDREN'S CENTURY

#2D

DUILISH GLIVENSHILD

PREFACE The cultivation of good citizenship provides common

ground upon which all actions of the community can meet. Citizunsing is not for a moment to be confused or identified with the copiel of the drum and the trumpet, or with the glorification of ones flag and country. Lather is it a reasoned a sposition—not too complicated for young

minds to grasp—of the system of government under which we live and of these institutions which are part of our national life. It must also treat of the problems which the rising generation will have to face when they arrive at manhood and womanhood and of the general principles upon which those problems seem likely to be solved. Above all, the inculcation of entitienship must enforce the priamount duty of every person to engage in some form of sorial strikes in the broadest sense of the term "Each for all and all for each must be the keynote of its treching. Good citizenship is the fulfillment in the practical affairs of everyday life of once duty towards ones neighbour.

In these days when the weakening of Authority and of the ancient Sanctions has left many without compact on the occan of life at is hoped and believed that in the after to become good critizens and in the desire to promote the welfare of the State may be found a plain good to right action. It is the externion of most teathers that

certain intellects are open to the appeal of humanity which would be closed to a simple impensive. Many people of this turn of mind become ardent advocates of, and workers for, the improvement of the lot of their fellows, and although their action may be based upon moral rather than religious grounds, the good citizenship of such men and women cannot be questioned. Winsters their motives may be, they are working for the good of humanity, and the world is better for their presence.

Certain difficulties beset the path of the writer upon Citizenship. He may deviate too far into pure Constitutional History, or Political Economy, whilst again, in another direction, he may be tempted into the domain of pure Ethics. To avoid superfluous digression into subjects touching so closely upon, and in parts overlapping, the borders of Citizenship, is not easy, and the author may himself be an unconscious transgressor.

In laying out the scheme of these chapters, he has endeavoured first of all, to describe in terms fitted to the youthful mind, the main features of our appient Constitution. Starting from the King as the historic and contral figure of our national history, he has briefly followed the growth of Representative Government through Parliament down to the recently created Local Councils. Any method of explaining our system of Government by starting from the Parish Council-the youngest, smallest and least familiar unit-and building up the structure through the Local Councils, to Parliament, and the Throne, is a reversal of historic sequence, and would render the task more difficult by reason of the fact that no satisfactory treatment of the functions of the Local Councils is possible without constant reference to the central institution-Parliament-to which they owe not only their creation, but from which they also derive all their powers.

Technical terms have been sparingly used throughout the early chapters, but where necessary—and the language of parliamentary procedure abounds in quaint and uncent words and phrases—their meaning is made [lim by the context

The last five chapters attempt to place before the reads some account of the social referris of racent years, and of the problems which still away asolution. The underlying purpose of this portion of the book is to arouse in joining and eager minds an enthusiasm for great causes, and a resolution to 1 by the part of a good citizen in furthering all work that has for its object the roising of the level of our time life.

At the end of each chapter has been added a sente of questions for discussion and research. Many of these questions are doubiless beyond the capitally dehealbury and schoolbury but they may perhaps serve to stimulate inquiry among the e of older years into whose limids the book may full. Most of the questions may be answered by reference to such useful handbooks as "Whitaker's Almanack", "Harell's 'Innel', "The Statesman's Year Book", "The Annual Charties Register and Digust", and the Year Books resuch by certain of the London daily papers. The latest edition (11th) of the "Encyclopedia Britannica" may also be consulted with advantage. Most, if not all, of the foregoing will be found among the books of references in any Free Labrary.

No attempt has been made in this "Primer of English Chiranship" to deal with the differences—and they are numerous—between the kgal, ecclesistical, and educational systems, and somal problems of England and the of Scotland and Ireland Although there is much that is common to all phases of British Chiranship, there are characteristic distinctions in the different parts of

the Kingdom sufficient to demand separate' treatment. Editions specifically adapted to Scotland and Ireland are, therefore, under consideration.

The author's grateful thanks are due to many friends for advice and invaluable assistance rendered in the

preparation of certain chapters of this book,

He must in particular acknowledge his indebtedness to the following gentlemen, all of whom have been good anough to allow the author to draw upon their wide and expert knowledge in various departments, viz.: Viscount Tivarton; C. Courtenay Hodgson, Esq., Clerk of the Peace, Olerk of the County Council, and Secretary to the Education Committee of the Cumberdand County Council; E. Levis Thomas, Esq., K.C.; F. C. H. Sinclair, Esq., Barrister-at-Law; Captain Hugh F. Sinclair, Esq., Cuptain A. J. H. Byrne, 3rd Battoin King's Regiment, late 3rd Dragoon Guardis; H. Ward, Esq., and I. S. Lloyd, Esq., H.M. Inspectors of Schools; and last but not least, W. Harbutt Dawson, Esq., whose works dealing with social questions both in this country and Germany, have won the widest recognition and respect.

In a series of chepters touching upon so many sides of our social, industrial, and civic life, as well as upon the law and its practice, there are plentiful opportunities for making general statements, which, by reason of their ineritable exceptions, lay themselves open to challenge. At the same time a sincere effort has been made to secure an accurate presentation of the facts, and it is hoped that any terrors that may be detected are of a minor character. The author has endearouned to give effect to the kindly, and sometimes searching criticisms made by many of the above-named, who have read the Chapters whilst in MS. Without their illuminating guidance, he would searcely have ventured to place this little work before the public.

Whilst thus acknowledging their welcome help, it must be clearly understood that the writer alone is responsible for all its faults and shortcomings

Any corrections or suggestions that may appear to add to the usefulness of the look will be gladly received and acknowledged by the author

F S

5. Fig Tare Court
The Temper London F.C.
July 1811

NB -The type in which the following Chip'ers are granted has been cheen an accordance with the recommendations of the Committee of the British Association argued if to inquire into the Influence of School Bools on Fyeight

CONTENTS

CHAPTER I

TIS HEADER THE WILL	FAST
The Lord Toa.	1
autoc say a J Pemeraly	9
Limited Monandy	2
One his One Flag	
Representing the lat on	ì
The Preroga tve of 'ler y	ž
Social Influence of the Throne	6 6 7
The Lountain of Hon r	
QUESTITIES	6
Off aller in	
The General Flection	
The Polling Station	10
Counting the Votes	11
Declaration of the Poli	19
Secret Voting. The Bake	15
Who are the futers'	24
Maubood Suffrage	1.
Women and the bota	1:
Garrana	46

Guerdana	
CRAPTLE III	
LACLIAMENT (Continued)	
Appointing Ministers	,
The Prime Mirister	;
The Loruph Min, ter	
International trb trat on	

xiv CONTENTS

Pà	RLIAMENT (Continued													TAGE
	The Chanceller of the	Exc	heo	uei	t.									20
	The Home Secretary											:	•	21
	The Lord Chancellor										Ċ	Ċ		22
	Other Ministers												i	23
	The Cabinet												·	23
	Offices of Profit													24
	Government Building	ε.												25
	Government Building The Civil Service													26
	QUESTIONS		•	٠	٠	•		•		•				27
,		CH	AŦ	TT	er.	r	v							
PA	RLIANENT (Continued					_	•							
	Opening of Parliamon	t. 1	Kin	g¹s :	Spa	ech								28
	The Labours of the Si	essio	n	٠.							:	:	:	29
	Logislation and Admi	nistr	atio	00.							i	·		81
	Control of the Execut	ive												. 81
	Voting Supplies			٠						٠				82
	Payment of Members Inside the House		٠		4					•	:			88
	Inside the House										,			84
	Liberals and Conserve	stree	S			٠		•		•				86
	The Government " Po	licy	".	٠		٠	٠	٠	•		٠		٠	86
	The "Parliamentary	Maci	ine	, "	•	٠	•	•	٠	٠	٠		•	86
	Party Government .		•	•		•	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠		٠	88
٠	Party Government . The Majority rules . QUESTIONS	•		٠	٠	٠	٠		٠		٠	٠	•	89
	QUESTIONS	•	•	٠	•	٠	٠	•	•	•	٠	٠	•	89
		CE	[A]	?T!	ER	7	r							
Pa	RLIAMENT (Concluded													
	The House of Lords .													41
	Scottish and Irish Pe					٠							,	42
	The Lord Chancellor : Degrees of Rank	agan	1,	٠		٠								42
	Degrees of Rank													44
	Lords as Legislators .		•			٠	٠	٠						45
	Altoring the Constitut	100.	T	ho .	Pac	liar	nen	t A	ct					47
	Reform of the House											٠	٠	49
	The Two-Chamber Sy												>	50
	Five-Year Parliament	s.						,						50

Omnipotent Parliament

Foreign Parliaments. .

The Privy Council .

QUESTIONS. . .

51

53

54 55

CONTI NTS	XY
CHAPTER VI	
TUR TOWN COUNCIL	ria*
The Mayor	56
Aldermen and Conneditors	\$T
Preserving the Peace The Police	59
Lighting Paving, and Changing	61
Water and Health	61
Byo-laws	63
Other Duties of the Town Council	(3
Munic pal Trading	U
The Mayer is a Magistrate	64
The Town Clerk	C
The Rates	66
Quismore	63
CHAPTER VII	
COPYTY AND OTHER COUNTES	
The Urban Duiriet Council	63
Rural District Councils	\$0
The Parial, Council	*1
Overseers of the Poor	72
Old Time Ligures	73
The Tithes	71
The County Councils	7.5
Now elected	76
Some of their Dutles	77
More and more Duties	77
Itates souin	~9
A Citizen a Opportunities	7.3
Questioxs	60
OHAPIFE VIII	
Bargs and Takes	
Why polesters	61
The Listet	82
The Foot Law	N2 H3
Ti e Guartiara	64
The Loor Late	80
Making the Assessments	17

CONTENTS

_												
RATES AND TAXES (Continue												aora
Inequality of the Raics .												89
Other Rates								_				89
The Taxes											ì	91
Income Tax		, .						ì			ì	91
Direct and Indirect Taxes								_				92
Effect of Taxes												98
Customs and Eveles												94
Taxation and Representati	on						,	ì	,	ì	ì	95
Questions.							ì		ì	ì	ï	96
CHAPTER IX												
					•							
Cours and Judges												
The Common Law	٠	٠			٠			1				98
Equity. Court of Chances	Ż				4	•						101
Court of King's Beach .					٠	٠						108
Itinerant Justices			•		٠	4	٠,		,	٠		104
The Judges				٠	٠	•	٠	٠		٠		105
Barristors and Solicitors				٠								106
The Law Courts			٠					٠	,			107
The Courts of Appeal .							٠	•		×		109
County Courts												108
Patty Bassions								٠				109
Patty Sessions Diagram showing relation	of t	Cou	rts									111
QUESTIONS												111
CH	AT	ייףכ	R.	3								
				-								
COURTS AND JUDGES (Contin												
Justices of the Pence .											٠	119
Quarter Sessions				٠					٠			114
The Jury-Petty and Gra-												
The Strong Arm of the La	N;											117
Special Constables												118
The Coroner's Court												118
At a Oriminal Trial												119
A Civil Action							4					121
A. Writ												122
Subsequent Steps in the A	etie	on										128
The Triel											,	123
The Trial												121
y												

CONIFATS	ANS
U ALTHO	
SOPPITAS AND SALLOPS The Divilsh Navy How the Navy is managed Officers and Men The Divilsh Army The Army Council The Regulars The Territorials Boy Scouls The Navitorial Plag The Estings of War QUESTOVS	196 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1 1
CHAPTER XII	
behools and Scholaps	
Harly Lducational Efforts Britals a d National Echools Ragged Schools Lives 19	164 167 147

CHAPTLE XII	
DOMOGIS AND SCHOLAPS	
Harly Lducational Efforts	366
British a d hat onal Behools	14
Regred Schools	10
Before 18 0	145
1870-1902	11
Inspectors and the Gode	15
School Age Half Timers	15.
Franing Schools	15.
Teachers an I Training Colleges	10
QUESTIONS	15

CHAPTTR	ZIII	
Schools and Scholabs (Continued)		
Fadowed Schools	•	157
Higher Grade and other Schools		160
The Universities		161
Technical Lducation		163
Modern Languages		166
The Polytechnics		168
The Educat onal Ladder		171
A Little Homily		1.3
Questions		17.6

CONTENTS

CHAPTER XIV

THE STATE AND THE	ď.				-		•							
														PAOR
The Child-Worker		٠									,			175
Before 1832		٠												176
1833 and onwards			•		4									179
1878														180
Defective Children					•								,	181
legeent Legislation														182 -
v recessorbers and a	7.70	300	ct											184
The Children's Oha	rier													185
Obtid Wellere Socie	ottes													187
Junior Advisory Oo	mm	itte	89				,							188
Other Voluntary As	(enc	168												183
The Poor Law Chil	d.											Ċ		191
Quistions						Ċ	Ċ		Ċ	Ĭ		:	i	193
•		•	-	-	•	•	-		-	•	•	•	•	
		,			_	_								
	Ç	Ж	AP	TE	R	Х	V							
THE STATE AND THE	Спп	LD.	(Co	nti	1111	cd)								
The Juvenile Offen														195
The Bad Old Times						•	•	•	•	٠		•	•	196
Transportation .	٠.	•	•	•	•	•		•	•	٠		:	•	
Slow Improvement	•	•	•	•	•		•	•	•	٠	•	•	•	
Mile New Eve	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	٠	•	٠	•	,,	•	700
The New Era Obildren's Couris . Industrial Schools	•			•	•		•	•	1	٠	•	•	•	200
Unitaren's Courts.		·	·	٠.,			•	•	•	٠	•	•	٠	201
Tudnetrial Pondois	una	Ke	юп	184	oric	98	•	٠	•	•		٠	•	205
Borstol Institutions		•	•	٠,	٠.	•	•	•	•	٠	•	٠	٠	200
Decrease of Orima		٠	•		٠	•	٠	٠	٠		٠	•	٠	206 207
Questions	•	•	٠	•		۰,	•	٠	•	٠	٠	•	٠	207
	C	H/	P	m	P	Δ,	VΤ							
MASTERS AND MEN	٠.				LV	_	••							
														909
Trade Unions	. •	٠	٠	•	٠	•	•	٠	•	•	•	٠	٠	200
The Aim of the Un													•	44.0
"Industrial Warfar	0"	:	•		*	٠	٠,	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	٠	215
Conciliation and Ar Wage Boards	hite	atic	111		٠		•			٠	٠		•	216
Wago Boarda						•	•					•		217
Employers' Liabili National Health Ir	r.													218
National Health In	sun	mo	В						•		•			219
Further Problems														221
Socialism. Gollect	ivo	017	202	shi										222
QUESTIONS	:													224
-														

೩೪

203

2,2

203

261

205

207

CHAPTER XVII

Page 18th 18th Pill Luncon

" Vanuers makyth Man

Compulsory and Voluntary Dutles

Citizens Busy, Sick, or Aratherto

Your Dobt to your Country

Vigalth and Citizenship

Thelit

QUESTIONS.

T AND THE THE THE THE	FACE
The White Man a Burden	23
The Deminions is emd the Seas	220
Canada	230
Australia	231
New Zonland	233
South Airca	233
India	234
British Rule Justinel	217
I gypt	روي
Crown Colonies ata	211
Importal Conferences	219
Committee of Imperial Peters :	213
Imperial Preference	244
I'migration and Immigration	21.2
A Priceless In cologo	213
Questions	251
CHAPTER AVIU	
THE COMPLETE CITICES	
The Young Citizen	253
Formation of Character	254
The Body the Temple of the Mind	255
Salf I ducation	257
Hal bles	259

QUAPTER I

HIS MAJESTI THE KING

THE LOYAL TOAST

WHENFIER and wherever British subjects assemble tracether at political intestings, whether in the Homeland or in the remotest corner of the Colonics it is a very ravial custom before separating to join together in inging the National Anthon—"God save the King

At every public banquet also, even in the most distant pertion of the Empire it would be looked upon as a strange and discourteens thing were the loyal freet of 'The Aing' for any reason emitted Upon all such hospital to eccasions, it is usual for the Chairman to his logists fill their glasses and to propose in a fer simple words the health of His Majesty. Every one then uses to his feet and drunks the toest with hearty acclaration. When speaking of this ancient custom let us remainber that His late Majesty, King Edward VII., over thoughtful of his people, caused it to be made known that he would feel hemself just as stall knowned were the loyal toset taken in water, thus removing for all times a difficulty fielt by many total abstances.

In rendering our houngs to the Söyen quaint and time bonoured fashion, we are expressing our allegience to his person, but emphasising the fact that the "Grown" is the coping stone of the whole fabric of the Constitution. By the Constitution is meant that elaborate system of institutions, laws, and customs under which we live and by which we are governed. In drinking the health of the King, we are acknowledging him as the head of the State, and therefore its greatest and most important survent.

You have learnt in your histories that the English King no longer wields the despetic powers that he possessed in times long past, but that he rules in accordance with the will of the people as expressed in the laws made by Parliament.

AUTOCRACY AND DEMOCRACY

A ruler whose will is law is called an autocrat, and the government of his country is spoken of as an autogracy. Where, however, a country is governed by laws made in an assembly to which the people send representatives, where in short you find "government of the people, for the people, by the people," there you have a pure democracy (from the Greek word demos, meaning the people). Our Government is not a pure democracy, because, although the King is no longer a law giver, he still has certain powers of which we shall shortly speak; They are not very great. Little by little Parliament has placed checks and limits upon the prerogative of the Crown until it may now be said that the King "reigns but does not rule." You ought to read in your English History how the long struggle against absolute monarchy was continued for centuries, beginning with the list of concessions, embodied in the Magna Charta, wrung from King John. This document which has been described as "the Keystene of English Liberty," was the first actual lumination of the Royal Prerogative. Inch by such the powers, rights and prerogatives of the Crown have been curtailed, until to-day there remains little but their outward form. It is true that the Acts of Parliament still require the Royal Assent, before they become Law (p. 37). We know, however that the Amp near refuses his assent when Parliament desires it. We still also speak of the King 'summoning Parliament" or "dissolving" it, but again we know that he does these things upon the advice of his Minusters. And although the King still processes beyond doubt the right to dismiss Parliament when he pleases and to declare war upon a foreign nation, and to pardon any criminal yet we know full well that the Soverigh near expenses these prerogatives except under the advice of his Minusters.

Indeed, much trouble and disorder would arise were the King of his own authority to summon and desolve Parliament after the abrupt manner of Charles I, or mere he to declare war upon some other nation without first consulting his Ministers.

LIMITED MONABORY

You see, therefore, that the Monarch of this Realm has been hedged obout with many restrictions so that his powers, though very great in name, are really very limited in reality. That, then, is why we speak of our Government as a "limited Monarchy," and the King as a "Constitutional Monarch". And since the King cannot rule just as he pleases, but must set in all public concerns as his Ministers advise, it follows that he must not be blaned if such Acts are displeasing to the people The Ministry alone is responsible. The people can show

their displeasure by barning the Ministers out at the next General Election. The King knows no party. The King is nowadays, raised quite showe party strife. He is neither Whig nor Tory, Liberal nor Conservative. It was not always thus, But during and since Queen Victoria's long reign, our Sovereigns have with great wisdom, shown no bias to the one side or the other in politics, and it is now an accepted rule that the Crown must not be drawn into the areas of political warfare. This impartiel attitude of the Ruling Monarch enables all of us, whatever our particular shade of political political to bury our differences, and unite in loyal adherence to the Throne. This it is, too, that enables every one to join with utmost cordiality in drinking to the health of "His Maiesty, the King."

You may now perhaps begin to ask what remnant of power is still left to our Sovereign, if he is obliged always to act in accordance with the advice of his Ministère. Some people will go so far as to tell you that we might just as well have a Republic, like France or America, with no King at all, as have one whose prerogatives have been reduced until they are almost annihilated. There are, however, very many great advantages in retaining a permanent even though nominal head of the Coyenment, in whose name all the business of the State is transacted, and who stands above and outside the party conflict. It provides a check upon the inordinate ambition of any prominent politician.

The mere, existence of a ruler even with nominal powers only; renders it impossible in our country for any man, to attain a position of undue influence. That is a fact of which you, may have thought little; but is nevertheless of great importance. There are many other good reasons which you may think out for yourself, for retaining

a Sovereign with prerogatives rarely used but still existing

OVE KING, ONF FLAG

The fact that the same flag floats over us all, and that the same King rules over every part of the Empire, is a thought very dear to loyal citizens in the Colonias and Dominions beyond the Seas No temporary President could over fill the same place in the heart and imagine tion of those who dwell far away from England as that occupied hi a Sovereign whose ancestors have for ages held the throne Each of us is governed to some extent, by sentiment and our feelings of deep loyalty and rever ence could never be the same towards some fellow citizen however distinguished, who for a slort space of time was holding the foremost position in the State. The King therefore, as the heredstary monorch, provides in his person a visible bond between British subjects all the world over a hand that will never be broken as long an we are fortunate enough to have such admirable wearers of the Crown as the great and good Queen Victoria King Elward VII and Queen Alexandra and their present Majestics, King George and Queen Mary

REPLESENTING THE NATION

It is because the Sovereign embodies in his own person oil the attributes of the State that he can on great ceremonal occasions represent the Nation in a reanner that would be quite impossible for an increwind head. The Sovereign is so for lifted above all other men by his high herelitary rank that he can be invested with social power which it would be difficult to entrust to

6 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

an ordinary citizen or to the temporary President of a Republic. It was in his capacity as the representative of the whole Empire that King George appeared at the great Durbar at Delhi, in December, 1911, where he received the homage of the Native Princes of India. The King, on that impressive occasion, in reality personified the objects and aims of British rule in India.

When also the Sovereign makes visits of ceremony to the monarchs of other countries, he goes not simply as an illustrious private person, but as the ambassador of the whole nation, to convey to the foreign ruler the goodwill of the inhabitants of this country. That in itself is a great office, which it is well should be performed by one who is above party ties, and beyond the reach of party politics. The more you think of this the more you will realise the value of the kingly office in our relations with foreign countries.

THE PREROGATIVE OF MURCY

Coming back once more to the powers that are still inherent in the Severeign, we find that the King holds in his hands what is known as the "prerogative of meroy." There is no criminal so vile or hase that the King could not perdon him. At time of great national rejoicing, it is customary for the King to display his elemency by releasing some prisoners and by shortening the sonteness of others. But even in these cases, although the King could do all this of his own authority, he usually seeks the advice of his Ministers before exercising this truly Royal prerogative.

SOCIAL INFLUENCE OF THE THRONE

There is another inalienable prerogative of the Crown, unlimited by statute, and often abused in times prat. We refer, of course, to the moral influence which the Sovereign can exercise upon his people by setting an example to the whole of Society of right living and right doing Fortunate it is that for nearly a century the weight of the Throne has ever been cast on the side of what is good that it may be always thus is the fervint wish of each of us when we raise our glass to the loyal teast of "The lang"

THE FOUNTAIN OF HONOLR

"The King is the bountain of Honour" By this is meant that he is able to bestew any title or other imporific distinction upon any of his subjects. He could-it so he desired-raise a dustinen to the rank of a duke. The hower of granting titles of nobility or of lower mark, is the greatest prerogative of our Sovereign By this means he rewards the statesmen and other survants of their country, to whom monetary rewards could not and should not be offered as recompense. There are-as you will soon learn, if you do not already know it-territors which every citizen may render to the community, which cannot be valued in pounds, shillings, and pence. The best work in this world is not that which is done for money Upon men and women who have performed some act of human, or rendered great public service, the Sovereign often confers some distinction, such as an order, or title, or medal When the King, as head of the State has deemed it proper thus to bestow some taken of his approval, you may be quite sure that the recurrent

will be accorded by his or her fellow citizens a respect which is far more sincere than that which is given to those whose sole claim to distinction is the possession of vast sums of money.

Questions for Discussion and Resea

1. Give some explanation of the legal maxim that "the King can do no wrong."

. 2. Differentiate between the word "limited" a public company, and to the monarchy.

3. Point out in English History instances of the limits of the Royal prerogative.

4. Name the countries in Europe that have an autocratic form of Government, also those in both bemispheres that are

Republican in form. 5. Give instances of political bias displayed by modern sovereigns with special reference to Anne and George III.

6. Cite instances of public service for which money coul be no reward.

7. Discuss in what manner loyalty can be displayed in

Republican State. 8. How would you provide for the award of honours

under a Republican form of Government?

CHAPTER II

PARLIAMI-NT

THE GENERAL FLECTION

Most of you will remember the last election, and the stire and turnoid with which it was attended. For neck-beforehand the rival candidates had been addressing meetings in your neighbourhood sometimes in public halls and sometimes out of doors and at street corners. Then came the actual day of the election. You will recall the scene outside the polling booth or station with all its fues and bustle. You saw large placeads stating that this was the polling station for such a district, and no doubt, you recollect how the carriages and motor cars came dashing up and discharging their load of voters, who then disappeared within the station by one door, and after a little time respicated at another. Perhaps you noticed that the voters often were party colours or favours red blue or counce as the case might be

During the course of this day the candidates them solves may have driven up to learn how things were going on. Then you must have I tard how their supporters cherred them lustily, whilst their opponents perhaps "locel" or made some other sign of disapproval. These are common incidents at election times when parts feeling rous high and when even undemonstrative people often become quite exerted and bustirous, you may have

noted also a few men around the entrance, very busily engaged in asking the voter his number which they promptly jot down in a notebook. Perhaps you saw that at intervals, messengers were sent with lists of these numbers to the "Committee Rooms" so that the canvassers may know who have voted, and who must still he hunted up and brought to the poll. For, as you no doubt observed on that memorable occasion, temporary offices were taken here and there in the town for the purposes of the election. These offices are the "Committee Rooms" of the candidates. They are occupied by the husy and eager canvassers and other voluntary workers who take upon themselves many voluntary services, especially that of bringing up the laggards who might otherwise either lorget or neglect to register their votes. Naturally the workers at the Conservative Committee Rooms are Conservatives, and those at the Liberal Committee Rooms are Liberals.

And so the "fight" goes on all day from 8 a.m. until 8 p.m., when at the stroke of the clock the doors of the polling station are closed, and the man who arrives a moment afterwards-and there is generally a late-comeris received with jeering hunghter by the crowd, as being just too late to record his vote!

THE POLLING STATION

Let us take a look inside the polling station or "booth" as it used to be called. It may bappen that your own school was used for the purpose of a polling station, in which case you got a holiday, and therefore remember the event very clearly. One of the rooms is arranged with a central table, at which some clerks are sitting, and upon which is a big box strongly padlocked, and with a slit in the lidt. This is the ballot box. Round. the walls are roughly constructed compartments provided with a ledge or shelf, and with a pencil attached to a string or chain. One or two policemen are always present to see that strict order is lept, and that no one nitempts to open or destroy the ballot box or its contents As the voters enter they are directed, one by one, to the table where the clerk sits. He asks them their name and address. Having satisfied himself that their names are in the list of voters, the clerk hands to each man a slip of paper upon which are printed the names of the candidates in alphabetical order. The soier then retires into one of the compartments and puts a X agrinst the name of the candidate whom he wishes to send to Parliment. The paper is then folded up lightly, so that no one can see where the X has been placed, and the voter returns to the table and slips his paper through the slit in the ballot hox. He then at once leaves the room by another door, and goes back to his work or lus home. He has duly exercised his right and duty as a citizen in volue at a parliamentary election.

COUNTING THE VOTES

At 8 o'clock in the evening the voting stops, and the hallot box, laden with its papers, is carried to some central place, usually the Town Hall. The police generally accompany this box to its destination, so as to protect it from any chance of being lost or tampered with. At the Town Hall, awaiting the arrival of the ballot boxes, one in number of important officials—the Mayor (or the High Sheriff, if it is a county election) the Town Clerk, and a staff of cummentors to count the votes. As soon as the last of the ballot boxes has arrived from the furthest

polling station the doors are locked and the counting

begins.

The ballot boxes are opened and the papers shaker out upon a big table. They are carefully sorted, and the number of votes for each candidate counted and checker with great accuracy. Ultimately it is discovered than one of the candidates has more votes than the other If the candidates "tie" the "Returning Officer" i.e. the Mayor (or Sheriff) gives a "casting vote."

DECLARATION OF THE POLL

When the exact numbers have been ascertained, the Mayor, attended by the candidates, advances to a window overlooking the street, in which by this time a vas crowd is sure to have gathered. In a loud voice be declares that Mr. — has obtained a majority of votes and is therefore returned to Parliament as member to that constituency. The successful candidate, amid the frantic cheering of his supporters, thanks the voters fo the honour they have done him in giving him the majority of votes, and assures them that he will try his best to serve his country and his constituents when he goes to the Parliament House. He also proposes a vot of thanks to the Mayor (or Sheriff) for all the trouble he has taken as "Returning Officer," in making all the arrangements for the polling and counting of the votes.

The defeated candidate also says a few words, and if the "fight" has been fair and square as it should alway, be; the victorious and the vanquished candidates shak, hands in front of the whole audience. This is a good English custom which we should all try to maintain.

There is no dishonour in being beaten in a fair fight and whether it is in football or cricket or in politics, as honest rivalry should not be allowed to embitter personal in lating. It is the part of a good citizen to harm how to notept a defeat as well as to enjoy a victory. About small and mean personalities refrain from abraive epithets learn to argue coolly and clearly give your opponent the credit for being as sincers in his beliefs as you are in yours, and you will earn the respect of these who differ from you. A calmly uttered statement of your political views carries for more weight with your hearers than hot words and loud bluster.

SECIET VOTING THE BALLOT

We may here note one or two things about the election Firstly the voting was performed in a secret manner, or by ballot." The compartment into which the voter retired was so constructed that no one could watch how he marked his paper, and he folded it up so tightly that no one could see the mark when he dropped it into the ballot box. And when ence at is in the box no one could tell at from any one else's paper. The ballot is serret, and the reason why we have adopted in Great Britain and Ireland this sicret method of voting is because it gives every man freedom to express his real opinion at the critical inquient of voting without any fear of being treated harship by his employers or others who might hold different views. It was only in 1872 that secret voting was introduced into our land. Before that time the voter had to declare in pulle at the 'hustings' or open platform, the name of the candidate for whom he voted It took both moral and physical courage to go through this ordeal. It required moral courage, because an employer mucht threaten to deprive his men of their situations if they voted against his wishes. A man

would, therefore, often vote against his convictions under fear of losing his livelihood. Again, it required physical courage to vote for an unpopular candidate, for the mob round the lustings were not content simply to hurl abuse at the voter, but would often throw missiles at him. The present system of voting by ballot is a great advance upon the had old order of things, which lent itself to much bribery and corruption. Votes were bought and sold quite openly, and the candidate with the longest purse would generally succeed in being elected. There exists still, no doubt, a small amount of bribery, but it is ineffective. Even if a man takes a bribe and promises to vote "the right way," it is impossible for the person who paid him to follow him into the polling booth, and see that he keeps his promise. This is one of the advantages of the hallet. It has made bribery useless,

WHO ARE THE VOTERS?

You may pethaps have asked yourselves: "Who are these voters, and how did they get the right to vote?" That is a very proper question, and one which you will be able to answer for yourself when you, have each Chapter VIII. on Rates and Taxes. Meanwhile you can remember this, that every male person of over 21 years of age, who owns or occupies a bouse or other building (such as a shop) or land to a certain value, and who has paid his rates, in entitled to be put on the Parliamentary Register,—that is on the list of those who may yote at a Parliamentary Election. Male Jodgers also, if they occupy rooms worth £10 yearly, can claim a vote.

The Overseers of the Poor, about whom we shall learn more in a later chapter, have to prepare the Register. Sometimes difficult questions arise as to whether a person is really entitled to the vote To settle matters of this hature, a "Revising Barrister" comes round every September and goes through the Register of Voters and hears claims and objections to thus, that, or the other applicant being entered upon the Register, and then he decides the question II any would be elector as struck off the Register or is not placed upon it when he thinks he has a right thereto, he can appeal to the High Court in London, about which you will learn more in the Chapter on Courts and Judges

MANDOOD SULLIAGE

Up to the present time the vote is given upon a "property qualification," is the voter must on not occupy land, or a bouse, or some other building which is "accessed to the poor rate". There is, however, among certain pulticiains a desire to confer the suffrage, is the vote, upon all males of full age—and perhaps upon foundes aboo—whether they are ratepyers or not. This would be a very complete change in our system of voting, and would "enfrauchise" (is would athant to the vote) inilions of people who are now veto-less. It may happen ore long that this change in our Constitution will be made by Parlament. But at present the vote rests upon the conversing or occupation of land or buildings, and upon the payment of rates.

WOMPS AND THE VOTE

An observation you, no doubt, made for yourself during the election, was that no woman was allowed to enter the polling station. Women do not yet possess the right to vote for a Mumber of Farhament or, to use the

proper phrase, they do not yet possess the " parliamentary franchise." In a subsequent chapter you will learn that they may vote at the election of County Councillors, and Town Councillors, but not as yet at a Parliamentary Election. You have heard and read of the claims made by "Suffragists" and "Suffragettes" to be placed upon the same basis as men in respect to the parliamentary vote. Very many men and women think that if women pay taxes they ought to have a share in the management of the country just in the same way as men have. A large number of Members of Parliament have pledged themselves to do all they can to pass a law giving the vote to women on the same terms as it is given to men. It is possible and even probable that before you are much older you may see women entering the polling station, and recording their vote in the manner already described.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- What are By-Elections? When do they occur?
- 2. Should canvassing be abolished?
- Give examples of the way in which candidates sometimes seek to influence voters without resorting to actual bribery.
 - 4. Is it ever good citizenship to abstain from voting?
- 5. If women are admitted to the parliamentary vote is there anything to prevent them also "standing for Parliament"?
- 6. What is meant by Piural Voting? Discuss the questions of "one man one vote," and "one vote one value."
- 7. How far does the election of a town councillor differ in procedure from that of an M.P.?
 - 8 Who is the MP. for your town and division?

CHAPTER III

PARI IAMENT (Communed)

APPOINTING MINISTELS

Ann now let us suppose that a general election is over and that your fivourite party is in the majority, and that the whole of the 670 MP s are waiting to take their seats in the House of Commons. For two or three weeks the country has been in a state of turmoil, and people are anxious to settle down again to their business which in many cases has been upset by the feversh unrest. In fact, so disturbing is a general election to the trade and commerce of the country, that it is suggested by many important leaders of industry that it would be well to have all the elections on the same day, and you may live to see this accomplished

We next read in the newspapers that the King has sent for the leader of the successful party, and asked him to become Prime Minister and to "form a Ministry"—that 21, to choose the men who are to occupy the great Offices of the State. There are many of these great offices to be filled. It would be too long to name them all, but you must know something about some of them There is to be an with, the office of the First Lord of the Treasury. The Prime Minister usually takes that for himself. The actual administrative work of the office is done by the Under Secretaries and subordinates, so as to

18 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH-CITIZENSHIP

allow the Prime Minister time for the many other affairs that claim his attention.

THE PRIME MINISTEE

The Prime Minister has a very laborious post. He is at the helm of the Ship of State, and is responsible for all measures submitted to Parliament. He is in constant communication with the King, in whose name all the affairs of the State are transacted, and who naturally. wishes to know of everything that takes place, and the reasons that actuate His Majesty's Ministers in any policy they decide to adopt. The Prime Minister has also to. make frequent public speeches to his supporters explaining the measures that his party propose to pass into law. At night he must be in his place in Parliament to take part in the debates. He must be a skilful and persuasive speaker, for upon critical occasions ha may find that some of his own party are inclined to be rebellious and want him to act differently. Thus a Prime Minister has during the whole of his period of office, a heavy load of responsibility. For the time being, he is virtually the ruler of the country, although, as you have already learnt, he does nothing in his own name, but always in the name of the King, or " with the authority of the Crown."

THE FOREIGN MINISTER

Next in importance to the Prime Minister comes the "Foreign Minister" or to give him his full title, "the Scoretary of State for Foreign Affairs". He is responsible for the relations and dealings of our Government withforeign Governments, and were he not both tastful and

careful ho might involve us in war with another State No one in the Ministry has greater powers for good or iff than the Fereiga Minister He is in constant communication with the foreign ambassadors

Every crulised country appoints Ambassadors or Envoys—usually men of high social standing and will experience in political affurs—to represent their State in other lands. In London you will find ambassadors from overy crulised nation similarly you will find His Britannio Majerty's ambassadors in Paris, Berlin, St. Petersburg. Vicina. Constantinoplo: Washington and elsowhere. The Length Minister is in touch with these grathenen and if any dispute arises between us and another country—say for instance—with Lussia—the Russian ambassador and our Foreign Minister will try to settle the difference peaceally. If, however, they are quite unalle to adjust the matter by peaceful negotiations between the countries which they respectively represent, the dispute unalle to adjust the matter by peaceful negotiations between the countries which they respectively represent, the dispute unalle have to be determined by force of arms, that is by war.

INTELNATIONAL ARRITMATION

War is a terrible means of settling difficulties, and in recent times many troubles which in a former day would have led to war have been settled by "Arbitration. There is now a Court which holds its meetings at The Hague in Holland for this very purpose. It was established in 1899, and is composed of very eminent judges of all nationalities. If two countries have a dispute, say, about the boundaries of some of their colonial possessing, they need not light the question out with guns and sword, but may agree to saturat it to the Hague Convention, and abude by the decision of the judges. Already

mmy such difficulties have been solved by this International Court of Arbitration, and it is hoped that Hitle by little, the gravest questions involving the national honour, or "territorial integrity" of a country may also be settled by this tribunal.

From what you have just read you will see how serious are the duties and responsibilities of the Minister who carries out the "foreign policy" of the Government, and how needful it is, therefore, for the King, under the advice of the Prime Minister, to choose for this office, a man whom both parties can trust. In negotiating with foreign countries we eught to be neither Liberals nor Consorvatives. The good of the State should be the first thought, and should be placed above all the party considerations

CHANGELLOR OF THE EXCHEQUER

Next in importance to the Office of Foreign Secretary comes that of the Chanceller of the Exchequer. This Minister is usually distinguished for his skill; in dealing with intricate questions of business and finance, inasmuch as he "holds the purse-strings" of the nation. The Chanceller of the Exchequer controls the national expenditure, and (of course with the approval of his colleagues) decides what amount of money shall be spent upon the Navy, the Army, Education, and so forth. Money must be raised for Old Age Pensians, and for Insurance against Sickness, and for very many other objects, such as for the salaries of the Judges and of Menhers of Parliament. To got this money, or Revenue as it is called, the Chanceller of the Exchequer depends upon the taxes, of which you will learn more in a Inture chapter. Every your—generally in April—the Chanceller lays before the

Horse of Commons a Statement called the "Budget," in which he sets forth the condition of the nation s finances. He tells how much the taxes have yielded, and how much he wints for the next twelve mently to meet the estimated expenses. Sometimes he has to levy fresh taxes, and then you will hear on all siles complaints from people who have to pay more for their tea or sugar or beer or for any of those articles which are tixed by the State Sometimes the Chancellor of the Frehequer is in the happy position of having a 'surplus that is, of having more revenue than he expected and then he "remits ' or diminishes one or more of the taxes. The post of guardian of the nation s purso is therefore one of great responsibility If the revenue is spent in wasteful and harmful wave or if unequal or unfair taxes ire levied up in the people the Chancellor of the Exchequer gets the blame and brings aupopularity upon the whole Government, of which he is such an important member

THE HOME SECRETARY

Another Minister of whose work you should know something is the Home Secretary. He occupies what is known as the Home Office, and as his name indicates he is chiefly concurred with the interpal affures of the country. To the Home Secretary belongs the general administration of prisons reformatories industrial schools, and the lumino asylums to which means criminals are sent. The Home Office, of which he is the head, also sees that the laws regulating mines, quarries, factories, and workshops are duly carried out. For this purpose he appoints a large number of Inspectors who trivic about the country and report to the Home Office any cases in which they find the law his been broken. A vast number of other matters

come under the management of this Government Department, so that the Minister in charge of the Home Office has a very busy time. All those various Acts for regulating the employment of children, the hours of shop assistants, the protection of wild birds, the expulsion of undesirable aliens, the treatment of habitual drunkards. etc., come within the province of the Home Office. Then, too, the Home Secretary is the medium of communication between the Crown and its subjects. All addresses and petitions to the Throne are presented by, and answered through the Home Secretary, who also advises the King in the exercise of the prerogative of mercy (see p. 6). It is on his recommendation that pardons and remissions of sentences are granted to convicted persons. Similarly, the Home Secretary recommends to the Crown the names of suitable persons for appointment to the positions of police magistrates, stipeodiary magistrates and recorders. These are not nearly all the duties that are performed by the Home Office hot they will serve to show the wide character of the control exercised by this department over the national nelfare.

THE LORD CHANCELLOR

One of the most responsible appointments that lies in the bands of the Prime Minister is that of Lord Chancellor, whose great and splendid and historic office will be described when we come to read about the House of Lords. Meanwhile, you may remember that the Lord Chancellor is the foremost member of the House of Lords, and during the tenure of his office is head of our judicial system.

OTHER MINISTERS

Many other ministerial offices have to be filled by the Prime Minister before he can be said to have complete l his task. Thus he must appoint a Minister for War to look after the army, a Minister called the "First Lord of the Admiralty who must answer for the efficient condition of the may, a Secretary for the Colonics, another Secretary for India another Secretary for Scotland, and a Lord-ligutement of Ireland. Then too a Postmaster-General must be appointed to the Post Office, and Ministers also must be found to take charge of the Board of Linea tion, the Pound of Trule and the Board of Agriculture, and the Local Government Board. There are still others with high and important duties, for instance the Lord President of the Council, who, in the absence of the Sovereign, presides at the sittings of the Privy Council (see p 54)

THE CABINET

At last the Prime Minister has selected the men whom he thinks fittest for the tasks they will have to perform, and the Ministry is complete. Out of the whole number of Ministers some fifteen or twenty holding the most important offices form a group which is known as the Cabinet. It is regarded as a high honour to be offered by the Prime Minister a cert in the Cabinet. Taken altogether the Ministers are spoken of as The Government, for it is in them that the actual power resides, though, as said before, they do nothing in their own names, but nlwnys as the Ministers, it servants of the Crown. Thus in our Government we always keep up the appearance of Royal Authority, although the real power belongs to the

people themselves, and they entrust it temporarily to their representatives in Parliament.

The Ministers now wait upon the King at some convenient time, and go through the ancient ceremony of kissing his hand, and receiving from him their Seals of Office. The Great Seal of England with which Treatiss, Acts of Parliament, etc., are scaled, is delivered into the keeping of the Lord Chancellor, who is frequently styled. "Keepor of the Great Seal."

OFFICES OF PROFIT

It would be a perfectly natural question for you to ask whether the Ministers receive payment for the very heavy work that is theirs when they "accept office". Yes, the post of a Minister is an "Office of Profit under the Crown." Ministers receive large salaries, often amounting to several thousand pounds a year, and in some cases also they have the use of a residence, conveniently situated near the Houses of Parliament, during their term of office. The Prime Minister's official address is at No. 10, Downing Street, whilst the Chancellor of the Exchequer is housed at No. 11.

Tou may be tempted to think that the salaries paid to Ministers are upon too lavish a scale, and that some may seek office simply for the sake of money. You must understand, however, that a man in the high position of a Minister is expected to show great hospitality to political visitors from the Colonies or abroad. Often the official salary is not more than sufficient to fover the cost of entertaining these numerous and important guests. Unless a man is already wealthy, thore are indeed some public offices which he could not county by reason of the great exponses attending their fulfilment. No money can buy

devotion to one's country. It is poor enticeoship to pry meanly for services which cannot be estimated by a cash standard

At what price can you value the services of the poors private soldier or bluejacket who dies at his post? They have given something to their country worth more than gold. At what price would you fix the wisdom, skill, or courage of Pitt, of Nelson of Wellington, or of other famous Statesmeo, Admirals, and Generals who have saved their country a honour in times of national danger? Parliament sometimes makes to such men great presents of money, and the Sovereign honours them by conferring a title, but neither title nor money can either buy or pay for valour courage, statesmanship or generalship. Their true reward is in the gratuful thanks of their countrymen. and in the sense of duty well accomplished. Since money i is a nicessity let the great Others of the State be well i remunerated. We expect Ministers to give the very best that is in them to the cause of their country They should, therefore, be placed above the temptations that sometimes assul men of small means Beware of false economy Efficiency, though costly, is in the long run infinitely cheaper than inefficiency. This is a sound principle of catizenship which has been tested by long experience and found to be true

GOVERNMENT BUILDINGS

Many of you have visited London, and have doubtless walked down Whitchill, past the tall Lifeguards standing on sentry, and noted the splendid buildings to right and left. Confronting the spectator is the magnificent pile of the Houses of Parliament with the Clock Tower and the Victoria Tower, and the stately mass of

CHAPTER TV

PARLIAMENT (Continued)

OPENING OF PARLIAMENT. KING'S SPEECH

Now will remember that we left the newly elected members waiting to take their seats in the Parliament House whilst the Primo Minister was selecting colleagues to fill the great offices of State. These appointments have now been made, and the day fixed for the opening of Parliament arrives. The King generally armages to

open Parliament in person.

Accompanied by the Queen, the King drives from Backingiam Raice in the State Coach, and is received with great ceremony at the entrance to the House of Lords: by the bigh dignitaries of State, clad in their sumptions robes of office. Proceeding to the House of Lords the King sents immedia upon the throne. The Queen sits beside him. A messenger is then despatched to summon the Members of the House of Commons to hear the King's Speech.

As the House of Lords and the House of Commons are at opposite eans of a long handsome cognition, it occupies a little time for "Black Rod" (as the messenger is quainfly styled), to accomplish his errand. Meanwhile the King and Quben and the whole assembly sit quitedly in their places. At last the Commons, headed by the Speaker, before whom is carried, the great Mage, arrive;

and stand uncovered at the bar of the House whilst the King rends the Speech which is placed in his hands by the Lord Chancillor. This document contains the programme of the proposed measures about to be presented for the consideration of Parliament. It outlines in a general manner the labours of the coming Session Thou, he is called the Kings Speech it is in reality drafted by the Chinnet, and submitted to the King for approval. The Speech always concludes with an invocation of the Drine blessing upon the labours of Parlia ment. After rading the Speech the King retires leading the Queen by the land.

The national dignified and picturesque ecremony of opining l'arli unent bein, over the Commons histen back to their nown thomber, and the work of Parliament legins in carnest. Purhaps a few members who have been detained in the country are waiting to take the Oath of Alleguance. This is a formality occupying but a few moments, but one nevertheless of high importance. Indeed, a member may be hearily finel if he takes he seat and joins in the business of the House Pifere having taken the Oath, or in de an equivalent Affirmation.

THE LABOURS OF THE SESSION

Whilst members are assembling and exchanging friendly greetings and congratulations after the views tades of the general election, we may consider for a moment the task to which these gentlemen are about to address themselves. They have come together as the chosen representatives of the nation to discharge tast duties and responsibilities. Upon their collective wesdom depends the welfare of the grantest empire the world has ever seen. Not only have they to look after the internal

affairs of England, Scotland and Ireland, but those also of India, and many of the colonies. The maintenance in an efficient condition of the Navy and of the Army ocenpies a large share of the attention of Imperial Parliament, whilst the commercial and political relations with other nations and with our self-govorning colonies have also to be carefully considered. All manner of social questions, such as the education and the health of the young; unemployment, insurance against sickness and accidents, problems of trade and wages and the housing of the poor form part of their work. These are but a few of the important subjects which claim the time and thought of our legislators, and you have only to look at the report of the proceedings of Parliament in the daily papers to see. for yourselves the infinite variety of other matters which come up before the House of Commons for discussion, and perhaps legislation. No tramway in the remotest corner of these islands, no drainage scheme, no railway extension, no harbour or dock construction, can come into existence without first obtaining the sanction of Parliament. Many of these affairs are of interest only to the people immediately concerned, and are carried through the House as "Private Bills." But even Private Bills have to go through just the same procedure as Public Bills, about which you will learn more in a few moments.

You will helieve, therefore, that Parliament is an overworked assembly. It has really too much to do and toomany things to think of to do thein all well and thoroughly. For this reason some people wish to set up subordinare Parliamonis in Ireland, Scotland and Wales, which shalltake part of the work off the shoulders of the Imperial Parliament. But as this: is a subject over which party controversy waxes very warm, we must pass on and leave such questions as "Home Rule" for discussion elsewhere.

PRINTERNAL DES PORTEINATION

If you examine somewhat further into the labours of I triament you will find that part of its work consists in making liss and part in seeing that those laws are properly administered Logislation or law making forms only a portion of the business of the House of Commons Much time is a cut by members in listening to examplaints about the way in which the law is being carried out I very gravance of a public nature bo it great or small is be unlit before I irlement. If for instance the design upon some new strungs displeases any member le will ask a question upon the subject as I the I ostmuster Cereral will answer that question. If a number of mombers are dissuts hed a debate will take place upon the matter and prehaps some alteration in the disign of the stamps will be premised. In the case of more serious proyance a the Covernment will undertake to bring forward a new Bill to remedy the troul le

Control of the Parcetive

The Ministers who for the time being are at the leaf of the great Repartments of State have to answer in Larhament for the good management of their departments. If anything goes very semondly wrong in any department the Minister in charge may be called upon to resign his office. Thus for example the Board of Education 1 is to see that there is a Public 1 lementary. School within reach of every could in the Mingdom, and if any village were not supplied with a school you may be sure that a question would som be asked in Larhament about in The Minister of Lalication would then have to give some good reason why no school had been supplied or leasen good reason why no school had been supplied or le

would be blanied for not managing his department better. Not many years ago a Minister had to explain why there was not more condite in stock in the Government magazines, and as Parliament did not think the answer satisfactory the whole Government had to resign, a general election took place, resulting in the return of the opposite party to power. By such means as those above outlined, Parliament sees that great departments of the Government are properly managed.

Master this fact thoroughly, for it distinguishes our Parliamentary system from those of some other great mations. Parliament not only controls ligislation, but

controls also the Executive.

VOTING SUPPLIES

It is hardly necessary to tell you that no taxes can be. levied without the consent of Parliament, !" No taxation, without representation.". Simple and reasonable as this now seems to you, it took centuries for Parliament to wrench this valuable prerogative from the Crown. Read. in your histories about John Hampden who refused to pay a tax levied by Charles I, without the consent of Parliament, and you will see with what cost and suffering our foreignhers gained for us what we now regard as a most elementary right. With keen practical sense our ancestors realised that if Parliament secured control of the national purse, it could gradually enforce other rights, by the simple process of refusing to grant money to the King unless he ruled in accordance with the wishes of his people. "No supplies until grievances are redressed," was their maxim, and it is the working rule of Parliament to this day.

Unless Parliament annually votes the money to pay

for the Army, the Navy, for the Civil Service, for Education, Old Age Pensions for payment of the interest on the National Debt, etc. a chaotic condition of affairs would ensue So mmong its multifarious duties Parliament has to spend many days in the session in " voting supplies," as the old phrase calls it. When the House "goes into Supply," the Government asks for money for various purposes Perhaps it is for the Navy, and the Government is proposing to spend several more millions upon the construction of battleships. A sharp discussion probably takes place before the money is voted. Some members may that the trovernment is asking too much and propose to cut down the expenditure. Others think it is not enough. Some assert that the money is not being spent to the best advantage, and criticise the Govern ment's action. One of the effects of having too much work to do is that the time allotted for Supply is often too short for a full consideration of the Estimates and millions will be voted in a single afternoon without sufficient regard for economy

PUMENT OF MEMPIPS

Up till lately the Members of Parliament received no salaries, and it was one of the sources of national pridthat there were among us a sufficient number of men who were willing to devote their lives to the service of their country in Parliament without payment or expectation of reward. In 1911, however Members voted themselves a salary of £100 per annum each. In this they were following the example of the Parliaments of other nations and of our self governing Colonies. Whether it will tend, as it has done in some counters, to errote a class of professional politiciary who go into Parliament for what they can get out of it, the future can alone decade.

INSIDE THE HOUSE

And now let us take a glance at the close ranks of members as they occupy the benches on either side of the House. At one end stands the Speaker's chair, "Mr. Speaker," as he is always addressed, sits there-a dignified figure in wig and gown. He is the "foremost commoner" of the realm, and possesses great powers of discipline. These powers are necessary, for sometimes party feeling runs very high, and hot words are shouted across the floor of the House. The Speaker, therefore, who is chosen by the whole House as its spokesman, and as the guardian of its honour and liberties, is entrusted with authority to "name" an unruly and disobedient member, i.e. to ask him to withdraw, and in extreme cases to commit him to imprisonment in the Clock Tower. If compulsion is necessary, the Speaker calls upon the Sergeant-at-Arms, who sits near by, to exercise the necessary force. Good order is thus preserved, with the result that our House of Commons is regarded as the most dignified and well-conconducted Legislative Assembly in the world.

In front of the Speaker is a table at which sit three bewigged clerks, and upon the table rests the Mace. The Mace, which is always laid in front of the Speaker when he takes the chair, is an ancient emblem of power. It is usual even for the Mayor of a town to be preceded by a macebearer when in procession. When sitting in Council the Mace is placed before him. We English people do not like too many ceremonial observances, but we cling to certain of them with great tenacity. And in the course of the ages we have learnt that there is much wisdom in surrounding those in authority with outward symbols of dignity. The Mace is one of these symbols.

Upon the right hand of the Speaker sit the members

of the party in power—His Majesty's Government—On his left hand are the members of the Opposition—You must look to the Speaker's right to see the Cabinet Ministers—They always ut on the Front Beneh. On the of positio Front Beneh at the leaders of the Opposition—If at the next election there is a change of Government and the Outs" become the Irs then the Opposition party woull cross the floor of the House—and occupy the Government benches

TIBERALS AND CONSERVATIVES

In our country there are two great parties which have been called by a mous names in the course of listory-Roundheals and Cavaliers Whogs and Tories and nonadays Liberals an I Consurvatives There are other parties in the House of Commons such as the Labour party and the Irish party These profess to be neither Liberal nor Conservative lut to be representative of the labouring classes and of the Irish people respectively. But as neither of these parties is numerically strong enough to command a working majority in the House they aide sometimes with one and sometimes with the other of the great historic parties and thus sometimes can turn the scale in one direction or another WI on they can do this they are said to possess the balance of power Laboral party is generally associated with the alea of progressive legislation The extremets in this party are often termed 'I adicals Tile Conservative party on the other hand as its name indicates is more concerned with pre-serving the settled order of things handed down to us from our forefathers. They are not entirely opposed to change or progress but they desire to make those changes with as little disturbance as possible to existing institutions.

36 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

It is, they say, always easier to pull down than to build up, and the Conservative party, therefore, always opposes any far-reaching changes in our Constitution.

THE GOVERNMENT "POLICY"

The programme-as we may call it-of measures which the Government desires to pass into laws is called its policy. Thus the Liberal party holds that Free Trade is essential to the continued prosperity of this country, and that Home Rule would be good for Ireland. These, then, are some of the items of the Liberal policy or "planks in the Liberal platform." On the other hand, the Conservatives think that a certain degree of Protection (of which you will learn more in a later chapter) would improve the trade of the country, and that Home Rule would be disastrous to Ireland. So "Tariff Reform" or "Protective Duties," and "No Home Rule" are part of the Conservative policy. You can for yourself think of many other matters which are the subject of great political controversy-for there is always before the country some proposal of importance upon which opinion is sharply divided.

THE "PARLIAMENTARY MACHINE"

Let us see, then, how the "parliamentary machine" works. First of all the proposals are written down and embodied in what is called a Bill. Before this Bill can become an Act of Parliament, that is, before it can be put upon the Statute Book as one of the laws of the realm, it must be "read" three times in the House of Commons, afterwards it must be sent up to the House of Lords also for their approval. It is usual to let the Bill go through its "First Reading" without any discussion. When,

however, it comes to the Second Reading there is -if the Bill is at all important—a big debate upon its principles If there is a division of omnion the House "divides" Those who approve of the Bill go into one lobby, and those who disapprove into another | Each side is counted, and the majority doubles whether the Bill is to go on or not. If the Second I ending is 'carried" the House "goes into Committee and the Bill is examined critically clause by clause and word by word. If the Opposition disapprove very strongly of the hall they draft a large number of amen lments are they suggest altern tions of the wording or addition il clauses or the omission of certain words or clauses. When the amendments are numerous you will easily see that this is a very tedions and lengthy business and cometimes after a whole even ings debate the Bill may not have advanced by more than a single word or sintence. As progress is almost impossible at this rate with long and important Bills, the Government closes the debate and passes several clauses in a block. This closure of the debate is meknamed "the guillotine since it cits off all possibility of discussing the clauses any further in detail After discussion, more or less prolonged and after the Bill has assumed what is probably its final form it is 'n ported to the House as amended, and comes on for its Third Leading Another debrito may follow and more amendments may be made and another Division taken upon it It is then "through" the House of Commons, and is sent up to the House of I ords to go through the same procedure there. --

If the Lords after it, the Bill has to come down to the Commons for their consent to the Lords Amendments, then hick ogain to the Lords and so on Finally when 'through' both Houses the Bill is then to the Throno for the hoyal Assent Thenceforth it is no lought a bill but an Act of Parliament. It is then a Law, and is insocihed in the Statute Book, and is always referred to by the place it occupies in that book. Thus the Children Act of which you will hear in a latter chapter is referred to as "8 Ed. VII. c. 67," which means that it was passed in the eighth year of the reign of King Edward the Seventh, and that the Act forms the 67th Chapter in the Statute Book of that year.

PARTY GOVERNMENT

We now see party government in the working. A Bill is carried bit by bit against the Opposition by sheer weight of the majority that the Government possesses in the House. It is of supreme importance, therefore, that there should always be present in the House a majority which will enable the Government to vote down the Opposition. To see that members are present in sufficient numbers to prevent the Government being out-voted, certain members are chosen as "Whips"-a term taken from the hunting field. The Whips keep the pack together, and "whip up" the stranglers. Each party appoints it own "Whips," and wee betide the unlucky member who misses an important division without having given previous notice to his Whip of his inability to be present. It is the duty of the Government Whins to "keep a majority," and they have a very busy time indeed in looking after members and informing them when their presence is urgently demanded. For you must understand that if defeated upon an important division, it is customary for the Government to resign office, and a general election must then take place again,

THE MAJORITY RULES

We live under the rule of the majority, and however small that mojerity may be, the minority has to give way This may or may not be the best possible system, but it has on the whole, worked well in our country But because it works well here do not imagine this system would suit all mers in all parts of the world. There are peoples who have not, like the British the faculty of selfcontinuent, and to whom representative government is quite unfamiliar. To them government by a bare majority would appear both engel and unjust. Remember that our institutions based upon the rule of the majority, are the growth of a thousand years of self government among a liberty loving and self reliant people, and that our native methods cannot always be transplanted into foreign lands with impunity especially when the inhabitants of such lands have nover even enjoyed or been trained to exercise the most elementary rights of citizenship

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

- 1 Discuss some of the difficulties that attend a Legislative Assembly that has not control over the Executive
- 3 State the advantages and disadvantages of payment of Members of Parliament
- 3 Name the Leaders (1) of the Opposition, (2) of the Irich Party, (3) of the Labour Party
- 4 Ascertain from some work of reference such as "Whitaker's Almanack" or "Harell's Annual" (1) the total number of millions sterling raised by traxation last year, (2) the amounts spent on the Navy and Army respectively, (3) the amount spent on Education, (4) the amount spent on the Cavil Service, (6) the amount of the National Debt

5. How far is it just to the minority, that the will of the

majority shall prevail? 6. If an M.P. is appointed to an "Office of Profit under the Crown" (e.g. if appointed Solicitor-General) during the course of the Session, he has to seek re-election by his con-

stituents. Discuss whether this practice (which only dates from 1708) should be continued or abandoned.

CHAPTER V

PARLIAMENT (Concluded)

THE HOPS), OF LOPUS

We will now follow the course of the Bill after its Third Reading in the Commons It has probably many adventures to suffer before it becomes an Act ' It has first to go up" to the Hou e of I ords and undergo discussion there. If the Lords amend it it must go back to the Commons for the latter to consider whether they agree with the alterations. Last of all, it has to receive the Royal Assent.

Whilst our imaginary Bill is awaiting its fate in the House of Lords, let us for a few moments study the con-

stitution of that Assembly

Of the three 'Letates of the Realm"-the Lords Spiritual, Lords Temporal, and the Commons-two sit in the House of Lords, an institution more ancient than the House of Commons In early times the Spiritual Lords greatly outnumbered the Temporal Lords or Lay Peers. To-day the position is rovered and only twenty six spiritual Lords set in the "grided chamber" These are the two Archbishops, the Bishops of London, Winchester and Durham and twenty one others plic are summoned to Path iment according to the seniority of their Conservation The lay lords number, at the time of writing, about 600, but as new peers; es are constantly being ere ited, and as titles now and then become extinct through the dying out of old families, there is no absolute fixity in the number of temporal peers.

SCOTTISH AND IRISH PEERS

The whole of the English Peers have the right to be. summoned to Parliament, but not all the Scottish and Irish Peers. After each general election the Peers of Scotland assemble at Holyrood Palace and choose sixteen of their number to represent the Scottish Peerage in the Upper Chamber until the next general election. The Irish Peers have the right to elect twenty-eight of their number to sit for life in the House of Lords, Those Scotch and Irish Peers who have not been elected to the House of Lords, are eligible as members of the House of Commons, and you thus sometimes have the apparent. anomaly of a "lord" sitting as an elected representative in the Commons. We are in this respect more demooratic than most countries. The eldest son even of a Duke can sit in the House of Commons until he succeeds to the title. The sons of peers are always commoners even though they often bear "courtesy" titles.

THE LORD CHANCELLOR AGAIN

The Lord Chancellor, as you have learnt in an earlier chapter, is one of the most important members of the Ministry. He is always selected because of his high legal position, and, if not already a lord, he is at oneo raised to the peerage. His office is so exalted and unique as to constitute almost a national institution in itself. The "Chancellor" was originally the King's confidential advisor and secretary, and in earlier days was always a

cleric (og Cirdinal Wolsey) and a distinguished man of learning. He became, as you will learn in the chapter on Courta and Judges, the dispenser of the King's "equitable jurisdiction," the "Keeper of the King's Conscience;" and stood next in importance to the King himself. The Lord Chancellor is now the head of our legal system and appoints (in the name of the King) all the Judges, except a few of the highest rank, whose appointment rests in the hands of the Prime Minister. He also appoints practically all the Justices of the Peace on the recommen dation of the Lord Lieutenant of the county The Lord Chancellor presides over the highest of our tribunals-the House of Lords-when the latter is performing its judicial functions as the Final Court of App al In full bettomed wire he sits on the Woolsack (as the ancient presidential sent is called) and presides over the House of Lords in its capacity as a Second Chamber Thus the Lord Chantellor forms a link between our judicial and political systems He holds office only during the existence of the Government, of which he is one of the most important members In early days, the Chancellor was a great prelate and had a large number of Church livings in his gift. Although nowadays no Chancellor 19 ever a clergyman, he has nevertheless a very large amount of Church "patronage" te beston, and he still appoints clergy to the Crown hvings. By reason of this bestowal of patronage in the Inglish Church no Roman Catholic can become Lord Chancellor-the only public office from which members of this religious body are excluded. The Chancellor still represents the paternal character of the Sovereign, in that he is the guardian of lumities and idiots, and of orphin children under age The position held by the Lord Chancellor is one of the highest to which a limitsh subject can aspire,

Though in a sense the Lord Chancellor is the Chairman of the House of Lords, his power falls far short of the Speaker of the House of Commons. For instance, the Lord Chancellor has no disciplioary authority. He cannot call the Lords to order, or indicate the peer who shall be entitled to speak if—as often happens—two or more rise at the same time in their places intent upon addressing the House. Matters like these, which repose solely in the hands of the Speaker of the House of Commons, are left to the Lords to settle among thomselves, by vote if necessary.

DEGREES OF RANK

'. Most of the members of the House of Lords are men who have been rewarded by a title for some service to their country, or they are the descendants of such men, the titles being hereditary. There are several grades in the order of nobility. | The Princes of the Blood-as kings' sons or brothers are called-come first, but very rarely indeed do they attend the House, and never do they take any part in political discussion. Then come the 2 dukes, of whom there are only about a score; then the marquises, numbering a few more than the dukes; then the earls, in number about 125; next the viscounts; and, lastly, the barons, of whom there are over three hundred. - You may wonder why the bishops, whose titles are not hereditary, find a place among the legislators in the Upper House. The right of these Church dignitaries to a place in the legislature is derived from the earliest usage. Far away in the distant past, when the King called together his Witan or Council of Wiso Men, he included the great bishops and abbots, who exercised immense sway by reason of their wealth and position. Thus it comes about that the hishops still are found in the Upper Chamber.

There are other members of the House of Lords whom we have not yet mentioned. These are the Low Lords, or Lords of Appeal, who are appointed life peers, and who receive large solaries to assist the House of Lords in performing those judicial functions which belong to it as the Final Court of Appeal. You will learn more of this saids of the character of the House of Lords when we come to the chapter on Courts and Julys. Even peers for his only, their titles do not descend to their ellest sons.

TOPES AS IFCISLATORS

You now know something of the composition of the Upper Chimber and are ready to learn what happens when the Bill which after perhaps n very stormy passage through the Communs, comes to the Lonis for their consent. Up to the year 1911 a Bill-before it could become an Act-had to pass three readings in the House of Lords just as in the Lower House In fact, up to that year the procedure in the two Houses was practically identical except that it had become customary for Ihlls which dealt with taxation not to be amended in any way or rejected by the House of Lords. It had become the practice for the elected representatives (ar the Commens) alone to decide what the electorate should pay for public purposes You have read in your histories-particularly in the period of the Civil War-how Parliament declined to permit the King to levy taxes without its consent. Little by little it became the custom for the House of Lords (though never formally relinquishing its ancient statutory right to amend or reject Money Bills) to acquiesco in this usage, and to allow such Bills to pass without any alteration whatever But in 1909 the Lords rejected a Money Bill, namely the 'Budget of that year (see p 21), and thus a crisis arose which has led to an alteration in the mode by which a Bill may be treated by the Upper Chamber.

To grasp the whole situation is is necessary to remember that formerly every Bill hefore it could become law had to be agreed to at each of three readings in the Lords; that the Bill could be refused a second or third reading; that amendments could be inserted in the Bill usually at the second reading to suit their lordships' views; and that unless the Commens agreed to the amendments proposed by the Upper House, the Lords could absolutely prevent it passing into law. To put it in technical language, the Lords had an "absolute veto" upon legislation proposed by the House of Commons.

Up to 1911 the foregoing statement summarises briefly the positions and powers of our Upper Chamber. But a radical change was effected in that year by an Act entitled "The Parliament Act," which protects Money Bills from the touch of the Lords, and with regard to other Bills limits their right to an "absolute veto." You will no doubt some day hear or read the whole story of the matter; but as it affords the best possible illustration of the way in which immemorial practice can be altered or modified at any moment by a Parliamentary majority. it is well for you, who, as the citizens of the future, will have the Government of the country in your own hands, to learn something of this Parliament Act, and of the changes it has introduced into the ancient meshwork of laws, usages, and institutions, which we call the Conatitution.

ALTERNO THE CONSTITUTION THE PARLIAMENT ACT 1

To begin with let us look at the first clause of the Parliament Act which renders Money Bills immune from attach by the House of Lords The clause runs thus -' H a Money Bill having been presed by the House of Commons and sent up to the House of Lords at least one month before the end of the session is not presed by the House of Lords without amendment within one month after it is so sent up to the House the Bill shall (unless the House of Commons direct to the contrary) be presented to His Maisty and become an Act on the Royal Assent being signified notwithstanding that the House of Lords have not consented to the Bill You thus see that the new Act withdraws all Money Bills from the purview of the Lords We will next see how the Act alters the position of the Lords with respect to Bills that are not Money Bills To an lerstand fully the operation of the Parliament Act you must be informed-if you do not already know it-that the majority in the House of Lords are Conservative in opinion The Liberal party complained that their Bills did not therefore have a fair chance in the House of Lords. They countlemed also that the Lords either made such amendments to Liberal Bills as to deprive them of any value or rejected them altogether It was asserted that the Lords scarcely ever amended Conservative measures and therefore instead of acting as an impartial 'revising Chamber, they improperly favoured one political party

Consequently, in 1911, after a tremendous political struggle the Liberals succeeded in present the Parliament Act which limits the veto of the House of Lords, that is it takes saws the sullimited power of that House of rejecting measures passed by the House of Commons, You may reasonably ask how the Lords over consented to pass a Bill which so cuttailed their own powers. This was done by threatening to "swamp" the House of Lords with a wholesale creation of Liberal peers.

You have already learned, in Chapter I., that it is one of the prerogatives of the King to create peers; but even in the use of that prerogative the Crown acts upon the advice of the Prime Minister. So, rather than see their House invaded by a host of new peers, the Lords gave way and passed the Bill, and on August 18, 1911, it received the Royal Assent, and became henceforth an Act-the Parliament Act. This Act of only eight clauses is of such importance, and you are so likely to hear more of it in the future, that you ought to know the exact words of that portion of it which limits the Lords' veto. They run as follows:- "If any Public Bill is passed by the House of Commons in three successive sessions, that Bill shall on its rejection for the third time in the House of Lords be presented to His Majesty and become an Act of Parliament on the Royal Assent being signified thereto." You thus see that if the Lords "throw out" a Bill a third time their resistance is then at an end. After passing through the House of Commons three times (and each time it must undergo three readings in that House) the Bill-after a third rejection by the House of Lords-can be taken straight over their heads to the Throne, and become law as soon as His Majesty has signified his assent.

This at present is the "Law of the Laud," but it is highly probable that some modification of it will be made in the future, when the reform of the House of Lords comes to be considered by Parliament.

REFORM OF THE HOUSE OF LORDS

from what you read in the last paragraphs you will have harned that the Second Chamber has been shorn of part of its powers, and that it can do little more than delay for about two years the passing of any measure of which it disapproves. For a long time past there has been a feeling among statesmen belonging to both great political parties that the hereditary principle' upon which the constitution of the H are of Lords is based in no longer in keeping with modern ideas. Some people express the position by saying that then is no justification for some 600 men sitting, as legislators simply because they were born to a title. It is desired by both parties to establish a Second Chamber upon some popular or elective basis-that is the whole or part of the House of Lords should be elected by the people. The Parliament Act opens with these words. Whereas it is expedient that provision should be made for regulating the relations between the Rouses of Parliament and whereas it is intended to substitute for the House of Lords as it at present exists a Second Chamber constituted on a popular instead of hereditary basis, but such substitute cannot be immediately brought into operation, etc. etc.

I rom these words you see that it is the expressed intention—of the Liberal party at all events—to bring forward some measure proposing a reform of the House of Lords. You will probably witness a great party fight on this subject, and as it alfords a constitutional problem of the highest order you ought to give this matter your close study. Indeed, each of you ought to take an intelligent interest in securing a just and reasonable settlement of this question, as every man, woman and child in the kingdom is directly affected by the smooth working of

the "Parliamentary Machine." Useful legislation is unduly delayed if the two Houses are occupied in fighting about the extent and scope of their respective powers.

THE TWO CHAMBER SYSTEM

The difficulties and friction that have of late manifested themselves between the two Houses of Parliament have led a certain number of politicians to ask whether we need a Second Chamber at all. There are some people who would like to dispense altogether with the House of Lords, and entrust the welfare of the country entirely to the House of Commons. Such people are sometimes called "Single-Chamber" men. This ogain is a matter upon which you will have to form your own opinion when you come to take your part in politics as a fully qualified citizen. It is often well in such cases to look abroad and see what other civilised nations have done, and under what sort of government they live. We find then, if we examine foreign practice, that America has two Chambers -Congress and Senate; France has two Chambers-tho Chamber of Deputies and the Senate; Germany has two Chambers-the Roichetag and the Bundesrath. Thus the greatest of incdern nations live under a two-chamber system, and perhaps it is not too much to say that the collective wisdom of the leading civilised countries has decided in favour of a Second Chamber.

FIVE-YEAR PARLIAMENTS

The Parliament Act of 1911, of which you have closedy heard so much has mode yet another alteration in our constitutional practice. By its 7th Clause it reduces the duration of Parliament from seven to five years, Hencelorward we shall have a general election at least every five years. You will learn that at one time in our history triennial Parliaments were the rule, but in the reign of George I their duration was extended by the Septemial Act to seven years. Experience has tended to show that a Government "loves touch" with the country if too long in office. The period of five years is therefore in the nature of a compromise, and you will doubtless watch with interest whether this shortening of the life of Parliament works beneficially or otherwise.

OUNDOTENT PARITAMENT

Those who have tead these chapters carefully may already have been struck with the fact that Parliament is completely muster of its own acts. One Parliament can entirely after or undo the work of another. If an Act were passed this session, it would be quite possible for Parliament to repeal it next session. There is nothing but the good sense of the members, who, taken together, form Parliament, to prevent them from reponling all those good and beneficial Acts which are the bulwarks of our liberties. We know that members would nover be so foolish as to do anything of the sort, but whilst Parliament can bind the Crown and the People by the laws it chooses to make, nothing whatever can bind Parliament We have noted how the Parliament Act of 1911 has made succeping changes in ancient constitutional usage. This power of re-modelling its own internal organisation is a feature which distinguishes our Parliamentary system from almost every other Legislature in the world

Most other nations possess a "written constitution," which is very inclusive. In the United States, for instance, the constitution laid down and committed to writing in 1769 by George Washington and his fellow-statesmon, is so "rigid" as to be almost unalterable. It requires a majority of three-fourths of the Legislatures of the several States to searce any modification, however small, of the Constitution, whereas, in Imperial Parliament, a "bare majority" of the party in power is sufficient to curry the most far-reaching changes. But do not think, therefore, that there is no cheek upon the abuse of power by a majority in either of the Houses of Parliament.

Whilst our parliamentary system allows the fullest scope for wise and thoughtful reform, it provides also a series of checks upon the gross misuse of power. Thus the House of Lords, as you have just read, can stop a measure from becoming law for at least two years. This provides a sort of "brake" or "drag" upon the power of the House of Commons, and prevents that Chamber from hastily passing any legislation that has not been fully placed before the country. Again, the House of Commons, by threatening to advise the King to create peers in sufficient numbers to vote down the resistance of the Upper House, can secure the passage of a Bill through the Lords. This is a check upon any unreasonably prolonged resistance by the Peers to a measure greatly desired by the House of Commons. Then again, as you have already been told in Chapter I., the whole tendency of our history has been to place a check upon the power of the Crown, so much so that the Supremacy of Parliament is now unshallenged.

There is still left to the Grown the right to refuse assent to a measure passed by both Houses, and although this power would only be used in extreme cases, it unqualitedly exists, and remains as a cheek upon any extravagant action on the part of Parliament. These "cheeks," or "balances," which are of the highest value in the working of the "Parliamentary Machine" form part of our "unwritten law," which, though unwritten, forms none the less a fundamental part of our Constitution.

LOPPICY PARIJAMENTS

I ving as we do in her a Purliment that is in a sine all powerful we are apt to think that the Purliments of other countries are end-wed with similar soverights. This is far from being the cise. Though there are many points of histories in the manner of their election and in their procedure there are very many joints of difference. The leading features of the British Latherment are that it is a complete matter in its own House that no outside authority can control it whilst it can control every body and every institute in within the realm. Not only does it control it is own constitution and can after the fundamental rules and regulations by ind under which it crusts.

Now how does this compare with foreign Parliaments I Wo have already seen how difficult it is for the American Government to modify even to the smallest detail the written constitution under which it exists. Further than this the American Congress does not control the Freeditive. In the United States, the Congress rules the Law, but the Prevident rules the Administration. In our country Parliament rules both, and if any Minister is guilty of bad administration be can be turned out of his office upon a change of Government. In German, the Richelsing or German Parliament has very little power over the Eventive, who are apprented and dismissed by the Imperor. In Russia the Duma has nother legislative nor administrative powers, and is nothing more than a consultative or deliberative council. Thus Parliamentary

Government means a great deal more in our land than elsewhere, and this is a fact you should remember when you are discussing the politics of foreign countries.

THE PRIVY COUNCIL

From an early period of our history the King of England was accustomed to consult a Privy Council-an important body recognised by law. The present Privy Council is the lineal descendant of the ancient Great Council, or Magnum Concilium, of which you have doubtless read in your histories. The Privy Council still exercises both judicial and administrative functions, but its political importance has almost entirely disappeared since the duties of government have been assumed by the Cabinet. The Judicial Committee of the Privy Council is the Court of Appeal from Colonial Courts, as well as from our own Ecclesiastical Courts, whilst other Committees take charge of the administration of various Government departments. The Board of Trade, for instance, is a Committee of the Privy Council, as was also the Board of Education until 1899, when it was established as a separate office. The Privy Council consists of about 290 eminent persons of every shade of political opinion appointed by the Crown, all of whom are addressed as Right Honourable. Cabinet Ministers are by virtue of their office appointed Privy Councillors. They principally form the acting Privy Council. The Lord President is the Fifth Great Officer of State, and as such is always a prominent member of the Cahinet. The Privy Council cannot originate legislation, but it performs many useful functions in the administration of the laws. Privy Councillors in both Houses have the privilege of speaking from the table instead of from their seats.

PARITAMENT

QUESTIONS FOR DISPUSSION AND RESEARCH

- Point out the advantages and disadvantages of a Second Chamber based upon the hereditary principle.
- 2 Ought the Bushors to set us a reformed House of Lords?
 3 Should a Second Chamber elected on a popular basis have the power to amend or reject Money Bulls?
 - 4 Discuss the question of " Single-Chamber Government."
- 5 What are the objections to Triennial Parliaments!
 6 How far has our "Omnipotent Parliament" control

6 How far has our "Omnipotent Parliament" control over the making of treaties with foreign Governments?

CHAPTER VI

THE TOWN COUNCIL

THE MAYOR

Those of you who live in London are well acquainted with the regular appearance, upon November 9th, in each yoar, of the sometimes interesting and always entertaining spectacle of the Lord Mayor's Procession. Upon that day—which coincided with the birthday of the late King Edward VII.—the new Lord Mayor of London goes in procession to the Law Courts, and is there introduced to and addressed by the Lord Chief Justice of England. He also visits the House of Lords, and is there introduced to and welcomed by the Lord Chancellor. The Lord Mayor, like all other Mayors, has for the period of his office certain judicial functions to fulfil. It is therefore quite proper and in accordance with ancient practice that he should first of all make the acquaintance of the two great legal dignitaries above mentioned.

In his turn the Lord Mayor, as head of the wealthiest as well as the oldest and most celebrated of all municipal corporations, invities the Lord Mayors and Mayors of provincial towns to London. A banquet is then provided for their delectation, at the Mansion House, where the Lord Mayor resides during his year of office, and the chief municipal rulers of the whole of England thus have an unequalled opportainty, thanks to the hospitality of

London's Chief Magistrate, of meeting and making each other's acquaintance

November 9th is a yearly landmark in the local government of our country, for upon that day the new mayors come into office and take up those voluntary dates which—if properly discharged—will usurp practically the whole of their time and energy for the next tricke mouths. Though some of the mayors of the large towns and cities receive a salary this remanieration is rurely or never sufficient to cover the expenses attaching to their position. For the mayor as the head of the Corporation must dispense hospitality upon a generous scale and his salary is usually usufficient for this purpose quite apart from other expenses to which the most prominent citizen of the town is expected to contribute

The Mayor who is diguisted in the case of certain great towns by the title of Lord Mayor is elected to the Chair by the votes of the Aldermen and Councillors. So before we proceed to consider the duties of His Worship the Mayor, let us turn for a moment to the constitution of the City or Borongh Council—generally called the Town Council—of which the Mayor is for the time being the Chairman or President

AIDFPHEN AND COUNCILLOES

Sometimes you hear the Town Council spoken of as the Corporation 1 at do not let the difference in name confuse you in the least. The Corporation companies the Mayor, the Aldermen, and the Burgesses or Citizens as represented by their Cooncillors. The Aldermen, who rank above the Councillors, are generally persons with considerable knowledge of the towns affairs, and as a rule one chosen by the Councillors from amongst

58 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

themselves on the same day as they choose the new Mayor. They hold office for six years, after which they must submit themselves for re-election if they still wish is remain in office. Since the year 1907 women are eligible as councillors and aldermen, and there have already been a few instances in which women have actually filled the office of mayor.

The Councillors (who in London are called Common Councillors and elsewhere Town Councillors) are the elected representatives of the burgesses or townsfolk Like members of the House of Commons, they have to go through all the stress of a public election, though course on a smaller scale. Town Councillors are elected on November 1st, and when that day next comes round you should watch what takes place in your town.

you should watch what takes piace in your town.

Conneillors ought to be elected by reason of thei
fitness for the honour, and not upon political grounds
but, nevertheless, politics sometimes creep into municipa
fifairs and disturb the judgment of the electors. Some
times, too, religious differences are allowed to intrudthemselves into these local parliaments. But if ever you
come to take your part in the government of your town
or district, set your face resolutely against anything o
the kind. In our local councils men and women should
be chosen who will score the best interests of the town
or district, without reference to their private political or
religious views. There is plenty of work to be done in
the council, as you will soon see, of a non-party character
In order that no part of a town shall go unropre

sented, it is divided up into areas called "wards," and each ward sends one or more members to the council Conneillors are elected for three years, and after that period they must again seek re-election if they wish to stay on the council. The voters in any ward are the

householders and ratepayers in that want, and since 1809 women have had equal rights with men in voting for town connection. Some day, as we said in a previous chapter, women may also possess the "parliamentary franchise," that is, the right to vote for members of l'arliament, but at present they have only the "municipal franchise"

The management of the town's affairs rests with the council, and by wisely exercising the powers placed in their hands by Parliament, the council may do a great deal for the health and happiness of their fellow-townsfolk. You see that as they are not paid for their services you cannot force the Mayor and Corporation to be active in well-doing, but if a few men and women of strong public spirit get on the council, it is surprising how much they can do to improve everything over which they have control

A Town Councillor, who goes to the council with the intention of giving his time and heet thought to the service of the public is a most valuable citizen. Ho is working for the common good.

PRESERVING THE PEACE THE POLICE

And now you shall see what an immense amount of work falls upon a Town Council Firstly, there is the preservation of order, and for that purpose a Police lorce is established usually called the City or Borough Constability. In times of disturbince such as occasionally happen during strikes, the Police Porce may not be able to cope with the disorder, and in that case the Mayor has very considerable powers. He can send for the military, and if the rioters refuse to disperse on his building them to do so, he may read the Riot Act sload,

and then order the military to clear the streets: If the mob should show resistance, the officer in charge of the soldiers may order his men to fire. Fortunately these scence of rictous disorder are not very common in our country, but it is well for you to know that there are in reserve strong measures for preserving the peace; and that when the police, who are an unarmed civil force, are powerless to protect the persons and property of law-abiding citizens from injury, it becomes the duty of the mayor to summon the armed forces of the Crown to their easistance.

. The Borough Police Force is under the management of a "Watch Committee," composed of members of the Council, and is inspected by the Home Office as to its, general efficiency. The very name of this important Committee reminds us of the days of the old "watchmen" who with lantern and staff patrolled the streets. calling out the hours as the night passed away. Very inefficient, you may be sure, were these old "Charlies," as they were nicknamed, and the introduction by Sir Robert Peel in 1829 into the London Streets of the Metropolitan Police Force or "Peelers," added greatly to the safety of the Capital. But it was not until 1856 that every County and Borough possessed a regular constanulary of its own, so that very many people still living can remember the days of the old watchmen. In London there are two bodies of Police-the City of London. Force under the control of the City of London Corporation, and the Metropolitan Force, controlled by the Home Secretary. The latter force, in times of danger, can be drafted to other parts of the country to assist the local police

LIGHTING, PATT O, AND CLEANSING

You would be astomshed if you could go back a century to find how builty lighted provid and clement were the streets and reads of even the great towns A few oil lamps often constituted the whole of the arrange ments for illuminating the streets pavements were very rough, and rouds full of deep ruts the mud was rarely removed and refuse and rubbish were thrown about any where and everywhere. I roper brainage was almost unknown and people drunk from polluted strams and wills with the result that infectious diseases like typhus and typhoid fiver smally v scarlet fever and diphtheria were rampant. If you compare this state of things with the conditions that at per cut of tain in a modern town you cannot fail to be struck by the contrast. The streets Iniliantly lighted by gas or electricity the smooth and chan roads and passiments the well-ordered systems of dramage and a were the colour supply of good water the general effort to rards cleanliness and the reduced death rate all rount to the censuless activity of the local councils by whose labours these beneficent changes have been effected

WATER AND REALTH

The first step towards securing and maintaining the public health is to make sinc of a constant and liberal supply of pure water. We therefore find that Parha ment has endowed the Local Councils whether Borough County, Urban Instruct, Rural District or Parish Councils with very considerable powers of providing the areas over which they have control with a continuous supply of pure drinking water. Perhaps you know that many

62 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

diseases such as cholera, typhoid fever, and other com-plaints are "water-borne," that is, the germs of these diseases are conveyed by water from one person to another person. You can thus realise how necessary it is for every one to be supplied with water which is free from any sort of contamination. It is only during the last century, and since scientific men have discovered that most diseases are communicated by means of very small microscopic forms of life-known as microbes or bacillithat people have awakened to the necessity of scrupulous cleanliness not only of the body, but also of the house and its surroundings. Consequently much of the work of the Local Councils has been in the direction of enforcing rules and regulations for the supply of pure water and the removal of sewage. So successful have these measures been, that we may safely say that the average individual life has been raised by some ten years, that is, we each live-on the average-ten years longer than our forefathers a century ago. Many diseases that ravaged our country have been almost stamped out, such as smallpox, cholera, and typhus fever, while others like scarlet fever, diphtheria, and typhoid fever are much less prevalent than formerly.

Local Councils could not have done those thiogs or, indeed, anything else, unless they had first received the necessary authority from Parliamont. The year 1875 is therefore one you should remember in this connection, for it was the passing of the great Public Health Act of that year which extended the powers of the Local Councils very widely, and made it possible for children in the future to be reared under cleaner, purer, healthier conditions than ever had heen known hefore. From 1875 onwards, almost every year has witnessed some

improvement in sanitary law, and some further addition to the powers of the local authorities.

BAF LAWS

To secure obedience to their orders the Town Council (and other Councils also) are allowed to make rules and regulations called 'bye laws to break which is punishable by a fino not exceeding £5. You will readily under stand that these miniature legislative enactments must not be out of harmony with the general law of the land Indeed before the bye laws have any force they must be submitted to and receive the sanction of the Local Government Board (see p. 23) which is the Department of the Central Government charged with the oversight of local administration

OTHER DETIFS OF THE COUNCIL

The policing lighting paving and cleaning of the streets, and the caring for the public health, though affording plenty of work for the Town Councils, do not by any means exhaust the number of their duties. It would take quite n large volume to describe with any sort of detail the multiplicity of affairs with which Coancillors have to concern themselves. The regulation of markets and of burnal grounds, the provision of parks, recreation grounds and open spaces, the establishment and management of free libraries, swimming biths, and public washhouses, the supervision of the erection of new buildings so as to see that they conform with the law, the inspection of nuisances, the analysing of milk and food and drugs to prevent adulteration, are some only of the matters over which the Town Conneil has to exercise authority

The provision and control of the education given in the schools, the feeding of school children, etc., etc., also farmish additional work for the Council to de. So great indeed is the mass of detail, that there is a langer of our Local Parliaments becoming overburdened in the same way as the Imperial Parliament. Again, many of our municipalities have undertaken the construction and management of the tramway system within their areas, as well as the supply of gas, water, and electricity.

MUNICIPAL TRADING

The question of "municipal trading" is one which bas excited a good deal of controversy-especially in There is no doubt that in some big towns, the taking-over by the Council of the tramway, gas, water, and electricity systems, has been attended with much success. There is talk also of making the supply of milk to the people the subject of municipal enterprise. The reasons for this are that impure milk has more often than anything else (except impure water) been the cause of outbreaks of disease, especially among children. To ensure a regular supply of pure milk is held to be of such importance to the community as to warrant the municipality entering into the business of dairy farming. You will be sure to hear more about this in the future, and it is only right that you should look at both sides of the question-for every great question has always two sides fo it.

THE MAYOR IS A MAGISTRATE

One of the honours which the State renders to the Mayor is to make him for the period of his office and for

one year afterwards a Justice of the Peace. About the duties and privileges of these important, unpoid servants of the State you will learn more by and by, but for the present you may remember that they are generally spoken of as the Magistrates, and they are entrusted with the administration of the law, and with power of punishment for small offences The Mayor's time in large towns and cities is often far too much occupied with other offices, to allow him to preside over the Pench and heten to all the cases that come before the magistrates Many of these cases also demand an intimate acquaintance with the law. We find, therefore, in the larger towns a barrister specially appointed to preside over the police court. As he receives a salary or stepend for performing this necessary and ardness work, he is called a "Supendary Magustrate"

Teople who have broken the bye-laws of the town, or whe have neglected to send their children to school, or who have been drunk or disorderly, or who have committed other offences of a bad but not desperately criminal character can be punished by the Mayor and his fellow magnificate, or by the "Strpendary," with fines or short terms of impresonment. How the more serious crimes are treated we shall learn in the chapter

upon Courts and Judges

THE TONY CLERK

Since the work of the Town Council touches the law at so many points, it is necessary to have some one near at hand who is shilled in the law and who can advise the council in all cases of difficulty. With this object it is usual to appoint a trained lawyer as Town Clerk, and this important official is always present at the meetings of the council, and keeps the "minutes" or records of the proceedings at such meetings. Many other duties devolve upon the Town Clerk. He has the custody of the charters, deeds, and other documents belonging to the borough, he sends out the summonies for the meetings of the council, and in any law suit in which the town may be engaged be has to prepare the case for the counsel. He has in short to watch over the work of the various Committees, and see that they not merely carry out the law, but do not exceed the powers that the law gives them. The Town Clerk's. Office is usually in the Town or City Hall, and is always only of the busiest departments in the billding.

THE RATES

One question must be asked before we close this chapter, and that is how does the Town Council get the money to pay for all the things of which we have been speaking? People have to be employed for all the purposes above mentioned, and some of them, like the Town Cierk, receive large salaries. The answer to the question is that the money is raised by "levying a rate" upon all householders and occupiers, and how that is done we shall learn in the lesson on Rates and Taxes,

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. The Town Council of a German Town cleet as their Head a "Burgermeister," who is a paid permanent official, and always a trained lawyer. Compare the advantages or otherwise of this system with the voluntary system in force with us.

- 2 Our country alone in Europe does not arm its police
- force What reasons can you gave for this practice?
 3 Discuss the presand coas of Municipal frading with appeals reference to the supply of (1) gas and water, (2) transways, (3) pure bulk.

CHAPTER VII

COUNTY AND OTHER COUNCILS

THE URBAN DISTRICT COUNCIL

Though many of you who read these pages will be living in towns governed by a Mayor and Corporation, yet no doubt there are many also who come under one or other of the various Councils which between them look after the local affairs of the rest of the country. Towns not yet incorporated as boroughs are under authorities named Urhan District Councils. We will therefore take these first. They are not very ancient in their origin, as they date only from 1894, when they supplanted the older Urban Sanitary Authorities. But though young in years they bave become very important bodies. The members of an U.D.C. are elected for three years in just the same way as Town Councillors (described in the last chapter), but in April instead of November. Though in many respects they resemble Borough Councils, Urban District Councils differ in having no. Aldermen and no Mayor.

The Chairman, though not wearing robes and chain of office, is, however, honoured by the State by being made a J.P. (Justice of the Peace) during his term of office

It would be tiresome to discuss in detail all the things that an Urban District Council can do; try simply to remember that it is very much like a Borough Council. Indeed, Berough Councils are also Urban District Councils Thus we find the U.D.C. looks after the lighting, paving, cleaning, and watering of the roads, it makes and maintains the drains and suvers, it can get permission to provide trainways, and to undertake the supply of gis water, and electricity, it may also with the consent of the ritepayers establish I ret. Ill rance I with Recreation Grounds, etc. To pay for all this othings it can also lavy rater about which you will harn motor in the next

County Force. Arother difference is found in the relation of the Urban District Council to the schools in its area. The big County Boronghe like Birmingham, Leeds Laver peed and others are charged with the provision and over sight of both elementary and secondary education whereas an ULD C—unless it is very important—has to content itself with the administration of the elementary schools only. With these differences you may regard an Urban District Council as having practically the same authority as a Borongh Council.

chapter But—and here it differs from the larger Boroughs
—it does not raise its own Lohen but have them from the

When you get away from the towns with their vast activities, into the heart of the country among the village you find other councils numely the Rural District Councils and the Parish Councils which were also called into existence in 1894 when they supplanted the order Rural Sanitary Authorities and Local Bords. To each of these a certain measure of authority is entrusted.

Everywhere, then throughout our country, we now

cheeve the people governing themselves. On the ling of scale we see it in the Great Parliament in London— Imperial Parliament we must call it, since it has to manage the offices of the Empire—and on the small scale in the lesser Councils in the towns and counties

RURAL DISTRICT COUNCILS

The members of the Raral District Council are elected, as a rule, on the first Monday in April. They hold office for three years, just like the Councillors in a Bionogh Council or an U.D.C. The Chairman of a R.D.C., who is elected by the Councillors, also becomes by virtue of his office a J.P. for the county in which his district is situated. A woman is eligible for the Chair, but she cannot, as yet, enjoy the privilege of sitting upon the Bench of Migitirates.

The management of the sanitary affairs in the country districts is the especial function of the Rural District Councils. Every member of a R.D.C. is also constituted, by virtue of his office, a Poor Law Guardian (see p. 84). The Rural District Councils have large powers in the matter of water supply, and must see that every house is properly supplied with water. They have authority to inspect private houses, and to insist that insanitary dwellings shall be closed altogether. Unfortunately, owing to the prevailing scarcity of cottages in rural districts, they permit many to remain open that ought to be shelished.

If there has been an outhreak of fover or smallpax in any house, or if a dwelling is in a filthy condition, the R.D.C. may order it to be disinfected and whitewashed. No pear to f a dwelling may be made into a pig-sty. In short the R.D.C.—like all the other Councils—has the power of forcing every householder to keep his premises wholesome. This, of course, he ought to do without any compulsion; but some people have yet to learn the value of cleanliness, whilst others are too laay to keep themselves and their surroundings in a clean condition, and must be

forced into better habits, for every dirty person or fifthy house is a danger to a whole community

To watch over all these sanitary matters the RDC (like other Councils) appoints an Inspector of Nursaces and also a Vedical Officer of Health who is usually a elector rending in the district. When these camitary officers report that or ctain numances or infectious diseases exist it is the duty of the council to take stops to step the nonances and to be all they can to prevent the infectious diseases from spreading. If necessary they may establish feace hisratile and cometeries. But the R D C does not con en it. if with the hall turn chansing of streets provid a of a hools libraries public baths wash louses recreation grands of unless indeed the Local Government Board cafees upon the R.D C (as at occasionally does) some or di of the powers of the Urban Councils. In many matters therefore a Rural District Council has to rely upon its big I rother, tho County Council of which we shall soon speak) for advantages that B rough or Urban District Councils can secure for themselves

THE PARISH COUNCIL

At the very foot and base of the local government system of our country comes the Parish Council and the Farish Meeting. The Parish Council which dries only from 1894 has taken the place of a very ancient body—the Vestry Meeting, so called from the place in the church where the meeting was generally held. In olden times when the parish and church were intelligence clessly connected the Vestry Meeting presided over by the parish and all the practical work of the parish. But since the institution of Parish Councils the only work left to the

"Vestry" is to elect one of the churchwardens, and to look after the repair of the church and churchyard, and to administer the ecclesiastical charities.

Very considerable powers are given to these smallest units in our scheme of local government. A parish having a population of 300 ar more is entitled to have a Parish Council. Parishes less than this (unless the County Council confers a Council upon the Parish) have only a Parish Meeting-a body which does little else but appoint some of its members as Overseers of the Poor, The Parish Council, which is elected in April, consists of from 5 to 15 persons nominated at a Parish Meeting. All ratenavers in the parish may go to this meeting and vote. Women may attend and may also be elected to the council, A Parish Council has the care of the local footpaths, but the main roads, as we shall find later in this chapter, are under the charge of the County Council. Labourers may be helped by the Parish Council to acquire small allotments of land for cultivation; open spaces for recreation may also be purchased, and cometeries may be provided. If the parish desires it, the council may also establish a free library, public baths and wash-houses, and may buy a fire engine and organise a fire brigade. It may also make arrangements for lighting the streets. But one of its oldest rights, which it took over from the Vestry, is the appointment of Overseens of the Poor, whose name indicates the nature of their duties.

OVERSEERS OF THE POOR

The Overseers are appointed yearly about the end of March by the Parish Council or Parish Meeting. In towns they are appointed by the Town Council or Urban District Council, and in some few cases by the Guardians. The chief duty of the Oversters of the Poor is to levy and collect the Poor Rate, about which you will learn more in a later chapter. The Overscore, acting under instructions from the Clerk of the County Council, also prepare lists of the persons liable to serve on juries, also lists of the voters for the parliamentary and local government elections In parishes not having a Larish Council the Overseers manage the parish property in conjunction with the Chair man of the Larish Meeting. The Oversours hold office for a year, and are not pail and it is usually a very thankless task that they have to perform The duty is one which any substantial househ lder in the parish may be called upon to undertake and the person chosen can be forced to serve. Even ludes have been compelled to take office. It is not as ourrous as farmerly Paid assistance is now permitted and the Assistant Overseer does practically all the drad_err of the office

OLD TIME IT CRES

he olden times there were other humble parish officials as pointed by the Vestry whose names are familiar to all of us. There were for instance the Larish Constable, very different in efficiency and apparance—if Dogberry in Shakespeares. Much Ado about Nothing is a fair cample—from the modern policeian belonging to the County Lorce, the Purish Beadle (whom all readers of Dickens "Oliver Twist" will remember) resplendent in cocked hat and gold lines and occupied with many small dates one of which was to see that the boys properly behaved themselves men in thirch.

The Parish Clerk was another off time official. He sat immediately below the parson and took a prominent part in the church service, leading the responses and

chanting the Amons. He is a figure often appearing in the literature of an earlier day. He was very much in evidence at funeralls, marriages, and haptisms, and alway expected, and generally received small fees for the shar he took in these ceremonies. The office is now of little importance, and is rarely filled.

Last, but not least, came the Sexton, who dug the graves and took care of the churchyard. A sexton is still appointed, but the closing of so many churchyards and the opening of public hurial grounds has tended to refine the importance of his office. He is now seldom more that the bell-ringer and caretaler of the church.

THE TITLES

Since the coming of the Parish Councils much of the authority formerly wielded by the parson has passed intthe hands of the Parish Council. But the ancient methoof supporting the elergymen who ministers to the spiritua needs of the parish still remains.

In all old parishes the rector or vicar derives a part of his income from the tithes. The tithes were originally the tenth part of the yearly increase (i.e. produce) of the land. The more valuable of the tithes were known a the "greater," and the less valuable as the "lesser" tithes. When a clergyman receives both, he is the "rector" of the parish; if he is entitled only to the lesser he is the "vicar." Many of the monasteries and abheys in Englan held livings in their gift, and received the tithes of their parishes. They kept the "greater" tithes for themselve—the tithe of wheat and of sheep and oxen—and allower the vicar or substitute (Latin, vicarius, a substitute), whereformed the actual, work of the parish, to receive the lesser tithe, the tithe of fruits. When the monasteries

were broken up, and their land given away, the new owners claimed and their descendants in many cases still continue to receive the "greater" tithes which were formerly paid to the abbeys and monastenes.

Not may see to this day in some parts of the country what are called Tithe Burns. Here the farmers used to send a tenth of their sheaves and a tenth of their lambs and eather. You may be sure it was not a very concennent way in which to pay the puren for his manistrations to the partsh. Yo in the year flood a law was passed called the Tithe Commutation let, by which the north of the titles was calculated in money. By this law all tithes were commuted in changed into fixed rent charges. In 15 o the price of corn—taken on the average all over the country—was 50s a quarter and the sum that each separate estate had to pay was calculated on that I say. As corn is cheaper to-day than it was then the tithe payable upon the land is proportionally less.

THE COUNTY COUNCILS

We have left this the greatest and most powerful of all the Local Councils to the last because to a certain extent the Councils to the last because to a certain extent the Council bas the oversight of all the lesser Councils. You must be were, get it quite clear in your minds that the County Council has no sort of authenty over the lig boroughs—about 70 of them—which are by reason of their size and importance called County Boroughs. Thus the County Council of Laucashiro has no authority made the County Borough of Laverpool and the County Council of Warnick-birro no power within the boundaries of the County Borough of Burmingham, and so forth. But over the non-county borough councils

the County Council exercises a certain amount of control, especially in those matters which concern the county as a whole, and not just the individual districts or parishes

The County Councils, as at present constituted, are not of great age, as they only date from 1888, prior to which the Counties were governed by the Magistrates sitting in Quarter Sessions. Then, for the first time in history, Parliament made it possible for the dwellers in the County to enjoy the benefits of municipal government without being forced to seek these in the towns, and allowed the rural communities to secure for themselves the amenities and conveniences of modern life so far as these are desirable in the country.

How Elected

County Councillors are elected usually about Maich 8th, and sit for three years. They proceed at once to choose a number of Aldermen, sometimes from among themselves, sometimes from ontside, and these Aldermen hold office for six years. They also select a Chairman, who by virtue of his office is a Justice of the Peece for the County. Women ratepayers may vote at county council elections, and may, since 1907, be appointed to the rank of aldermen, or even to the Chair, but in the latter case the appointment would not carry with it the right to sit on the County Bonoh of Magistrates.

Though County Councils have entrusted to them such great powers, they must keep strictly "within the four corners" of the Acts of Parliament that give them these powers. They may make bye-laws (see p. 63), but those bye-laws must not be contrary to the general law of the land, and must receive, the sanction of the Home Office before they can be enforced in a Court of Law.

Some of their Duties

You shall not be weared by any lengthy description of the work of the County Councils The following out line of their powers will however, give you some notion of the immense influence they may and do exercise upon the well being of the whole of their "administrative area. These powers comprise the making levying, and expend ing of the county and other rates the erection and maintenance of the Shire Hall for County Hall) in which they hold their meetings and in which the small army of county council officials have their offices, the keeping up and in good repair of courts police stations and other county buildings, the hierann of thestres, music-halls, rice-courses motor cars etc. the making and keeping in repair the main roads and county bridges (less than 100 years ago a man could be executed for dunaging a county Indge, so important were these structures held to be to the community), the building and supervision of pauper lunatio asyluma reformatories, and industrial schools, the protection of wild birds, the prevention of pollution of streams and rivers, the inspection of weights and measures, and the stamping out of swine fever, foot and month disease, and other plagues among domestic animals To perform all these numerous functions the county council has to appoint a large number of inspectors, clerks, and other officials. The London County Council has to employ over 20,000 people t

More and More Duties

You would think that the above list of daties was chough to keep the council and its staff busy without any further responsibilities, but in 1894 the County Councils received from Pacliament the oversight of the working of the U.D.C.s, the R.D.C.s, and the Parish Councils, whilst in 1902 supreme control over all the public elementary schools within the "administrative county," and the responsibility for the county's higher education was also laid upon their choulders. Then, too, they have received power to regulate shop hours, and to appoint inspectors to see that the hours of work in shops are duly observed, also to regulate motor-cer traffic, and to preserve ancient monuments.

The control of the County Police is not entirely in the hands of the County Council, but is shared between a number of councillors of the County Council, and an equal number of J.P.'s appointed by the Justices of Quarter Sessions (see p. 113). This Joint Committee appoints a Chief Constable to organise and command the Force,

RATES AGAIN

You will at once recognise that all these things cost money, and must be paid for. It is true that the Chairman, Aldermen, and Councillors—all honour to them for it—take no pay for the time and thought they give to the affairs of the county. But the officials have salaries, and buildings have to be erected and kept in repair. How, then, are all these things peid for? In the usual way—that is, by "levying a rate" upon all people in the county area, who own or occupy land or houses. This "county rate" does not, however, yield money enough, nor would it he fair to put all the cost upon occupiers of land or houses. Consequently the central government, that is, the Imperial Parliament, makes certain grants out of the

general taxes to county councils to defray part of the cest of the schools and teachers, main roads, public vaccinators, medical officers of health, inspectors of nuisances police, etc., etc. Generally when a large amount of money is required—as for instance for the laiding of a County Hall or School or Police Centr or a large bridge, the Local Government Board will give the County Council permission to borrow the requisite sum. But in such cases it is olways provided that the loan shall be repaid by instalments spread over 30 to 60 years. Recently, owing to motor traffic the cost of road repairing his become very heavy and just of the money received for motor car hieroes is now handed over to the County Councils to help towards the upbech of the highways. Grants are also made by the I and Board for this purpose

A CITIZEY'S OPPORTUNITIES

Very many of you when you attum to manhood or womanhood, will be possessed of a vote either for Parliament, or for the Local Councils we have been reading about Probally you will have votes for both. A vote is a trust which you must not highly regard. Take a keen interest in all matters of Government. The Local Councils are open to any one who wishes to enter public life. You therefore will have your opportunity of taking an active part in the government of your town or country it is to duty as well as the privilege of the critical to see to the affecting of his local government. It is work well worth doing and it is all the more honourable because it is honorary. A good citizen activated by a desire to serve his fellowmen will find in the Local Councils a wide fill of useful social service.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

 Are you living under a city or Bovough Council; a Council of an Urbau District Council; or a Parish-Council? You may be under more than one. It so, discover which is your authority for saultary matters, which for main roads, which for elementary education, and which for higher education.

2. Name the Chairman of the Council under which you

3. Who are the Lord-Licutenant and the High Sherisi
of your County? What functions are performed by these
unpaid officers of the county?

4. If your town or village has not a Free Library of Public Baths, what steps would have to be taken to secur one or other of these advantages?

CHAPTER VIII

RIFLS AND TAXES

With Necessali

Too have all heard of the rate-collector even if you have never meet him. For some mason or other his has carned an unfortunate reputation and people are apt to speak slightingly of him and of his hisk. And yet a collector of the rates or of the taxes performs services as necessary to the community as those of almost any other public servant. The fact is we all dislike having to pay rates and taxes, and we visit our dislike upon the person whose duty it is to collect them.

You have learnt in the preceding chapters of many things that have to be done by the Government for the people as a whole. An Army and Navy have to be maintained at enormous expense, amounting between them to scores of millions of pounds per annum. Then the Schools, the Civil Service, the Judges and Courts of Law, Old Age Pensions, Insurance against Schoess or Unampleyment, and the payment of interest on the National Dibb, to mention nothing further, absorb a vast number of millions more amount of money raised? The answer is by the Tuxes (often called the "King's Taxes") levied upon all of us by Tatlament

Coming down from these national matters to those of

local importance, we find that money is required by the various local councils, to meet the cost of maintaining the police force, to pay for paving, lighting, cleaning, and watering the streets and roads, for the erection of buildings and offices, as well as for the salaries of the numerous clerks, inspectors, and officials who use these offices. Sometimes, when large expenses have to be met, a Council has to borrow money-as, for instance, for the construction of . waterworks, or gas and electricity works. In such cases, besides the ordinary expenses, the Council has to pay. interest on the horrowed money, and also to repay yearly a portion of the principal sum. You see, therefore, that on a lesser scale the Town, County, and other Councils have to levy taxes, like the Imperial Parliament. We call these local taxes the Rates. Having been elected by the free vote of the burgesses or householders, the Council taxes the town, like Parliament taxes the nation.

THE RATES

As perhaps you have heard more about the Rates than the taxes, let us consider them first. People often gramble about the rates and complain that they are "too high," forgetting perhaps that we cannot have all the conveniences and advantages of civilized life without paying for them. Still, there is no doubt that some Local Authorities; have been very extravagant, and have borrowed money and spent the rates in a prodigal manner. The only remedy for that is to send better mon to the Council, who will see that the public money is expended economically as well as wisely. Efficiency, you have learned, is generally costly, but there is no excuss for waste or extravagance.

. But before you can understand anything about Rates

and Rating, which is the most complicated portion of all our legal system, you must bearn something about the origin of the Poor Law and of the Poor Rates, which were the first of all rates, and to which every bouseholder is compelled to contribute.

THE POOR LAW

If you think of it a man is never nally destricted the has a cottage in which to live a bit of land on which to grow food the right to run a low or a few shiep, pigs, goess, or fowls upon a common to gather stocks in the wood, or cut turf or peat for fuel. He may have little or no money, but he has the whitevorthal to be sliethered, warned, and ted and that is a long way from being destricte. To be a landle-s man was a term of represent in early times. Up to the dissolution of his monasteries even the poorest had pro tically all these things, and except in bad seasons when the crops failed, they managed to get along and to avoid starvation.

Whatever the faults of the monasterns, they afforded great help to poor folk in times of freque and distress, feeding and supporting many who would otherwise have pershed. They seem also to have stood between the great lords and the peasants, using with the poor in

many a dispute

When, therefore, in 1536 the monasteries and abbeys began to be suppressed, the humblest workers lost a kind friend, and as the new landlords were often very grasping, and, not content with what they had got as a gift from the King, or had lought at a very small price, began to enclose the common bads, and at the same time to convert much of the land which had formerly been tilled into pasture for sheep, you will understand that large

numbers of the peasants fell into great poverty. To add to their misery, the coinage also was tempered with, and wages were paid in had money. It is not surprising to learn, therefore, that in 1601 the first Poor Law 1 appears on the Statute Book. You can remember that it was this Act which first of all instituted Overseers of the Poor—officers who are regularly appointed up to the present time (see p. 72). The Overseers were ordered to mise, "weekly or otherwise," the necessary funds for relieving the poor by taxing every inhabitant in the parish. In this we see the beginning of the "poor rata" which is with us to this day.

No more striking example can be found in the whole of our history of the disastrous effects of ovil rule, than the long, and story of the attempts made in the last 350 years to remedy the impoverishment of the people that began in 1536. Sources and source of Poor Law Acis have been passed by Parliament, and there is still much to do. In 1905 a Royal Commission was appointed to consider the working of the Poor Laws, and to propose remedies. The Report of the Commission, issued in 1909, coorpies over 1200 pages of a large volume, and to doubt whan you come to engage in political life you will both hear and read of many suggestions made in that Report for the reform of our Poor Law—and it needs a great deal of votors.

THE GUARDIANS

In early days each perish had to support its own poor; but that system proved unsatisfactory, as some parishes had very few paupers, whilet others had large numbers. Sometimes, indeed, a great landowner would pull down the cettings in his parish so as to drive his labourers to live in another parish, which would be responsible for them in times of unemployment, sichoses, or distress. So great were abuses of this kind that in 1834 the parishes were grouped together into "Unions," of which there are non 657 and the duties of ribering the poor were transferred from the Overseers to new authorities called Boards of Guardians.

The Overseers nowadays have really nothing to do with poor relief, and cone in themselves chiefly as you learnt in the last chapter with the collection of the Rates and with the preparation of certain hats about one of which—the Valuation list—we shall speak directly

The Boards of Guardians who are elected to April by the ratepayers, sometimes on the name day as the Local Councils, held office for three scars. To them is entrusted the innistration of part of the money raised by the Oversers. Thes perform their duty chally through "rollesting officers" who must visit promptly those who apply for relief, and give immediate and if necessary, and report upon each case at the next meeting of the Guardians, who will then decide what further steps are to be taken

It used to be the practice of the Guardians, more than it is at present, to discourage the system of outdoor reluct—re the giving of money or goods—and to compatible poor and helpless to accept 'undoor reluct'—ie to enter the workhouse. Since the grant of old age persons to old folk over 70, there is a marked tendency towards helping the poor to keep up their own bomes, however humble and poverty-stricken. It is often imposable in the workhouse to arrange for husband and wife to remain together, and for their children to be with them flat the administration of "outdoor reluft is attended with great difficulty, and is open to much alias." There

are always tramps and wastrels, who, if they can get free food and clothing, will never do a "hand's turn" of work, Such as these are likely to be encouraged by a too free use of outdoor relicf. The great problem, therefore, is to assist the deserving poor only-those who by illness or misfortune have come to grief-and to place them on their feet again, whilst rigorously suppressing the incorrigible loafer. The citizen of the future has one of his greatest tasks in solving this problem of how to belp those that deserve help, without making the rates and taxes too heavy for the others, and without encouraging the drones to make the nation keep them.

The Guardians also enforce the Vaccination Acts. For this purpose they appoint a Public Vaccinator, who is a doctor, and a "Vaccination Officer," who goes round.

to see that no one evades the law.

THE POOR RATE

And now, after having learnt a little about the Poor Law and how it compels every citizen to contribute to the relief of his poorer brethren, let us for a few moments study the way in which the poor rates are fixed. It is only reasonable that, as every householder is forced to pay poor rates, he or she should know something about the way in which these imposts are levied, and how the money is spent. It would take a volume to go into the matter in any detail, so we must content ourselves with a few broad statements of the general method of procedure.

If you are not a householder yourself, you might ask your parents, or the person in whose house you live to show you the "Demand Note" for the poor rate. These notes come in half-yearly to every householder, and very unpleasant consequences follow if the money is not paid. If you evanue this note you will see that the Union in which you live, and also the Parish, are mentioned in the heading, then your name and address appear, and then in a very direct manner, which does not sound at all polite, you find some words like theso — The Overseers of the Poor demand payment of the Poor Late, etc., etc., Underneath are figures showing how the total sun you have to pay is made up. Sometimes, especially in country distincts, other items, such as the Exposes of the Guardians and Overseers, are included under the name of the Poor Rate. At the foot of the Note you will observe the name of the Assistant Overseer who as you harnt on p. 73 is the officer who does most of the actual work in the collection of the lates.

MAKING THE INCOMENTS

And now let us ascertain how the Overseers contrive to make wealthy not no pry more to the poor rate that those who can only after a little for it would be manifestly unfair for every one to be compelled to pay the same amount. Our system of riting roughly sectires that the rich shall contribute more than the poor by looking at the kind of houses in which they both live, and calculating the "net annual value" of these houres. The Overseers perform this duty of estimating or "assessing" the "annual ratiable value" of all the land, houses, and buildings in their district, and when they have made out their Valuation List, they after a copy of it upon the doors of the churches and chapels in the Union, and exhibit it in certain other places to which the public, have access. It is fairly easy for the Overseers to discour what read a man pays for his house, but in cases where a man owns his house and pays rent to nobody, they have

to make a guess as near as they can of the rental at which the premises might be expected to "let" from year to year. If an owner, or occupier, thinks he has been "assessed" too high—that is, if he considers that the Overseers have over-valued the "annual rateable value" of his premises—he can appeal to the Assessment Committee of the Grardians, and give reasons why he thinks the Assessment too high; and, if his reasons are good, the Assessment Committee may reduce the valuation.

The Assessment baving at last been duly fixed, the figure becomes of great importance. Let us suppose that a householder finds that the "net annual value" of his house has been assessed or fixed by the Overseers at £30. Henceforward that householder will find that not only his poor rate, but also his other rates will be based upon that figure. The word "rate" comes from the Latin "ratio," and means a "proportion"; and the share a man pays of the local taxes is "in proportion to" the rent at which ho is "assessed." Thus, if the local rates in your town come to Ga. Sa. in the £, it means that for every £ at which the Overseers have assessed your rent, you must pay 6s. 8d. per annum. The man, therefore, whose bouse is assessed at £30 per annum will pay thirty times 6s. 8d., i.e. £10 yearly to the Rate Collector, or £5 every half year, You may very probably find that the zent you pay to the landlord is a little higher than the "annual nateable value" at which you are assessed. That is because the Overseers, in order to arrive at the net rateable value, deduct the cost of repairs, etc., necessary to keep the premises in sound condition from the "gross estimated rental."

INEQUALITY OF THE RATES

The above plan of raising money is a rough and ready way of dealing with a difficult problem—the problem of making each man pay his peoper above—neither too much not too little. Some well-to do people, who could casily afford to pay more, will live in little houses to escape paying a large sum to the rates. On the other hand, shopkeepers, who are obliged to take a heavily-nufed house for the purposes of their tride, often pay an undue share. The rates vary chormourly in different parts of the country, and are aften heaviest when they should be lightest. Thus, in London for natione, there are Boroughi in the Last I nd where the various rates amount to over 10) in the 4. A man therefore inhabiting "a £50 house" in those parts will pay £25 or more to the rate-collector, as well as his rint to the landlord. This, you see, is a very provous hardship oud in poor districts the people often complain bitterly of the turien of the rates

One of the reasons of this inequality in the rates is that in some parts of London and in certain towns and districts in the country, there are large numbers of casual labourers, who in times of distress or of lad trade become a charge upon the rates, that is, they receive "outdoor ralid," or they have to be supported in the norkhouse. In such districts naturally the "poor rate" is very high, since it requires a large sum of money to relieve the necessations cases.

OTHER RATES

If you examine the next Demand Note that comes into your house, you may find another rate mentioned beside the poor rate, iv. the "General Distinct Rate," called in Beroughs the "Borough Rate" Sometimes these

90 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

rates are demanded upon separate Notes, sometimes on the same paper. No uniformity of practice seems to be observed in all districts. In fact, the whole subject of local taxation is conspicuous for the number and variety of the rates, and of the authorities that may levy them, and the purposes to which they are applied. There is no more complicated portion of our laws than that dealing with the rates. If you should ever become a member of your District, County, or Town Council, you will soon find this out for yourself. It would be well if Parliament could find time to simplify the whole of our rating system. but it would be such a gigantic task that the legislature shrinks from attacking it. Usually the Borough Rate, or General District Rate is heavier than the poor rate, because it represents the money that is to be spent upon all those things which you read about in the last chaptersewers and drains, paving, lighting, and cleansing of the thoroughfares, and all the other expenditure incurred, for the improvement of the town or district, and for the general benefits of its inhabitants. The amount each ratepayer must contribute towards these objects depends entirely upon the annual rateable value of his house or land, or of the premises in which he carries on his trade, and this figure-you will remember-is fixed by the Overseers first of all for the purposes of the Poor Rate. So you see now very clearly how important it is for a householder to be correctly "assessed." If the Overseers overestimate the net annual value of his premises, then he not only pays too much in poor rates, but in every other rate as well.

People so ...mes speak of gas and water rates. But a are no really rates, since the householder pays for · has actually consumed, and not a sum bearing 1 proportion to his sent.

THE TAXES

If you are fond of figures it may interest you to know
that every year the Government requires a sum of about
\$14\$ for every man, woman, and child in Great Britain and
Ireland to provide "Rovenuo wherewith to pay for our
soldiers, sailors, judges evil servants, postmen as well as
for the battleships, guns and other armaments for the
Nax) and Army, also to meet the interest upon, and to
pay off lit by bit the immerse introval dish contracted
in time of war by our incustors. As there are inillious of
people—children for instance—who cannot carn £1 a
just; it is plun that some bids must pay a very much
greater sum into the National I velocium.

INCOME TAX

The device employed to make men with big incomes pay more than the men with small means is called the Income Tax. I very year a min has to state truly (he can be heavily fined if he gives falso information) the amount of his income. This information goes to the Surreyor of Juland Revenue, who then sends him a notice that he must pay before a certain date such an amount of Income Tax. Speaking generally a man must jay 9d out of every £ he actually carns and he 2d out of every £ that he receives as dividends, not or interest on money. These were the figures in force at the time this look was written, but they may be varied at the pleasure of Parliament. The Income Tax is always fixed for the year when the Chancellor of the Erchequer larges in the "Budget Pall" (see p. 21). You should look out, therefore, next April when the Chancellor introduces his Budget and see whether any alteration is made

in this tax. To lessen the hardship upon the poorer classes, nobody pays income tax whose entire income from all sources is less than £160 per annum. Thus the man with (say) £180 per annum only pays tax, upon the excess above £160, that is upon £20. But on the other hand, very rich men with over £5000 per annum pay a super-tax, £.a much heavier income tax than men with less than that amount. In Germany even the working man with wages of only 18s. a week has to pay income tax.

DIRECT AND INDIRECT TAXES

Since a man pays the income tax directly into the hands of a Government Official this tax is called a direct tax. Other direct taxes are those like gun licences, dog liconces, carriages and motor-car licences, etc., etc., which have to be taken out at a post office. The money in that case is also paid over directly to an officer of the government. Then, too, the stamps that you buy to put upon your letters, or which you put on a receipt for payments over £2 in value, are direct taxes. There are, however, a great number of taxes which are not paid directly over to the Government, but which get into the Exchequer in rather a roundabout way. When, for instance, you buy a pound of tea, though you may not know it, you are paying a tax to the Government in an indirect manner. Every purchaser of a glass of beer, wine or spirits, or ounce of tobacco is contributing indirectly to the Revenue. How does he do this? Take the case of tea as an illustration. The man or merchant who buys the tea in India or China and "imports" it into this country, is not allowed by the Customs Authorities to retail it to the public until he has paid a tax of a few pence (at the time of writing 5d.) on every pound. This tax he, of course, adds to the cost of the tea, and then he adds his profit to arrive at the price at which it shall be retribed to the consumer. When, therefore, the housewife comes out of the shop with a pound of tea in her busket, for which she perhaps pays 1s. 8d, she has puid a tax upon the tea just as really as if the had first handed 1s. 3d to the shopkeeper for the tea, and then gone outside and paid 5d to a government official for the tea tax. In our country we try to tax only the lexures and not the necessities of life tee has only been known in Lingland for about 00 years it cannot really be called a necessity, though many people have come to think it so, whilst we could certainfy line without interacting liquors and tolacco. These are all decined luxures, and are taxed accordingly.

But we cannot live without corn and meat, and these things are not taxed, though you will find that some political leaders suggest that food ought to be taxed

Effect of Taxes Taxes morniably make commodities dearer, so it would

be a hardship on the very poor to tax food. These are, however, political subjects insufficed to this little book, which is written simply to tell you about the position of the citizen in the State, and the duties of the State towards him, and of him towards the State. You will, however, not escape from the question of the taxation of food when you come to manbood or womanhood, and unless you bring sound and accurate knowledge to bear upon such matters, you will not know which way to vote. Try, therefore, to get at the basic principles of taxation, and thus prepare your mind for applying these principles to your politics. At present one of the principles that governs the taxation of this country is to regard taxes as

uniortunate necessities and levied solely to raise Revenue. Another principle is that taxes should press as lightly as possible upon the poorest members of the community, and that as few things as possible should be taxed, and these in the nature of luxuries. Thus we tax tea, wine. spirits, and tobacco, but not food; carriages and motorcars, but not tradesmen's carts or motor-lorries : dors kent. for pleasure, or hounds for hunting, but not the showherd's faithful companion or the blind man's guide. Wealthy men have to pay for leave to keep hitlers, footnen, grooms and menservants generally, also for displaying a "coat of arms" upon the panels of their carriages, etc., but there is no tax upon the less wealthy housekeepers who can only afford to keep a female domestic servant, No country in the world levies so few taxes as we do upon imports. Whether that is a sound policy or not is the battleground of the great controversy between Protection and Free Trade-a subject of the highest importance, and one upon which you should keep an open mind until you have mastered all the facts.

CUSTOMS AND EXCISE

To collect the Revenue upon all the tea, tobacco, wins, etc., that come into the country a small army of officials, is required. You have, no doubt, read in various story books of exciting encounters between revenue officers and smugglers. Every rocky bit of coast-line has its simulgars' cave " and some romance connected therewith. What is smuggling? It is simply an attempt to get goods into the country without paying " customs duty." Tobacco, silk, lace and brandy were the favorrite objects of the simugglers' trade, and even to this day there is a certain amount of evasion, of the revenue

reason for so doing, because we have in our country a system of voting which depends chiefly upon the property a man owns or occupies, and for which poor rates are paid. There has long been in England a principle that there should be no TAXATION WITHOUT REPRESENTATION. that is, no one should be asked to contribute money for the purposes of the State or of his locality, without having an opportunity of expressing an opinion upon how the money should be spent, and whether indeed any tax or rate should be levied at all. The ordinary citizen expresses his opinion by his vote, and that is why Rates, Taxes, and Votes are so closely associated. At present, practically every male householder or occupier in town or country over 21 years of age, who has paid his noorrate, possesses the "parliamentary franchise," i.e. the right to vote at the elections of members of Parliament; and male lodgers can claim a vote if they occupy a room. worth £10 a year. Householders and occupiers of premises of the value of £10 per annum, whether men or women. can vote at other elections provided they have paid their rates. All shop assistants, coachmen, lodge-keepers, caretakers, porters, labourers, etc., occupying houses or rooms . which would qualify them for householders, are entitled : to be put on the register of voters, although they may pay. neither rent nor taxes.

It behoves every citizen to ascertain for himself whether he is qualified for a vote, and to see that his name is duly placed on the register. Claims must be sent in to the Overseers before August 20th in each year.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Consult "Hazel's Annual" or "Whitaker's Almanack," and ascertain how much was expended last year out of the

taxes upon (1) the Army , (2) the Navy , (3) the Civil Service , (4) Libration, (6) Old Ago Pensions, (6) Interest on the

National Debt

2 How was the National Debt mentred! Are we paying

it off f 3 How much is the Poor State in the £ in your town or district? How much also is the Ikrough Rate or

General District Bate! What is the total for L of your rate x 1

to the Guardians! How many Relieving Officers does your Board of Guardians can be ! 5 Name the Medical Officer of Health and the Inspector of Nuisances for your Parish or District. Are these officers remarked or efferment

4 Who is your Assistant Overseer and who is the Clerk

6 Consult the reference lasks named in Questim I to ascertain has much Revenue was raised last year from (1) the means tax, (2) the tex tax, (3) sound tax, (4)

beer tax 7 From the same volumes find what we pay in tax on every the of ten and tolucco and sugar, how much on

every gallon of " [rest spirit, and how much on overy barrel of beer

8 How much does a dog luence cost f I Hates and taxes are said to be ' payments made by all

for the good of all " How far is this true ?

10 Are church and churst buildings assessed to the ratest

CHAPTER IX

COURTS AND JUDGES

THE COMMON LAW

It everyone observed the Colden Rule, and did to his neighbours as he would that they should do unto him, there would be no need for Courts and Judges, Fines and Penalties, Prisons and Policomen. But samong the millions of citizens there are always some who act unjustly towards their fellow-men, and we must, therefore, have some authority to settle disputes, and to decide what punishment must be meted out to those who commit orimes, or otherwise break the law.

Like every great institution in our land, the law has very slowly grown into what it is at present. Far away in the distant past, long before the Norman Conquest, our Saxon forefathers had their rules and customs by which land was bought or sold, held, and cultivated, and by which crime was punished. They had their meetings or councils for arranging their local affisirs, and their rough-and-ready courts for trying persons charged with crime. We should not novadays approve of all their methods either of trial or of punishment, but they believed in a public trial, and that no man ought to be a judge in his own cause, or take the law into his own hands. These are sound principles of justice which we hold to this day. It is certain that no people

in the world except perhaps the Rimaus, had so strong a sense of law and order as our " rude forefathers of the limitlet" When William the Conqueror established him self in this country by force of arms, he found a number of customs and laws existing which he was far too wise to try to uproof. The Normans had no written laws of their own to Iring with them when they invaded this country where Kings had been lawgivers. So in the 4th year of his reign when the work of conquest had been completed William or lained that peace and accuraty should be observed between his English and Norman subjects, and for this end he renewed the "Laws of Edward the Confessor with certain additions made by himself. What these line were we do not exactly know, lut this edict of the Conqueror shows that certain rules and customs the basis of our (ommon Law, were already firmly established among the linglish people as early as the reign of Edward the Confessor | These laws, probably never committed to writing were demanded regularly at the beginning of each new reign until Magna Charta in 1215 supplied the people with a more substantial founda-tion for their liberties. The latter great of liberties and privileges containing 63 clauses is so important that it was called by Lord Chatham 'the Bible of the Luglish Constitution, and by Hallam, "the Keystone of Fuglish Liberty '

You will read in your histories how both Henry I and Henry II were determined to establish a reign of law, and that to those enlightened rulers—very different from Wilham Rufus and Stephen—we one largely the system of itinerant or travelling judges, who still carry the Royal Justice throughout the length and breadth of the land, and hold their Assizes or Sittings at the most important towns and either.

attit Ctercy

Some of you may live in an Assize Town like Exeter. Leeds, Durham, Liverpool, and many others, and may have seen the Judges from the High Court of King's Beach. and may have wondered at all the pomp and ceremony with which they are received when they come to "clear the gaols" of prisoners awaiting trial, and to try "civil" causes" that are not taken up to London to be tried there. We shall learn more about these judges and about the Assize System later in the chapter, but what you should now understand is that the establishment of itinerant or travelling justices above all things developed and settled the Common law, which was in fact a careful selection from those usages which from time to time the commonsense of our countrymen pronounced to be valuable. The judges gave expression to the commonsense of the community. make laws for them.

and thus the law grew, and adapted itself to the needs of the people in the days when there was no Parliament to Thus gradually the general customs of the land became fixed rules or laws which all had to obey. The rules were by no means always committed to writing or set down in any written statute or ordinance, but depended upon general acceptance for their support. For instance, it -- became a law with us that the eldest son should be the heir of his father's estate; that a man charged with a crime should be tried by a jury of his fellow citizens, and that this jury should consist of "twelve good men and true"; that a man should meet his accuser face to face, and that he should be accounted innocent until proved guilty; that every a cu, whether of high or low estate, should be equal before the law, etc., etc. Our Common Law is pre-eminently a native growth.

Based on Saxon customs, moulded by Norman judges, and independent of foreign systems, it is, as Lord Ricon says, "as maxed as our language and as truly national"

The Common Law has in recent times been extensively embodied in Statutes, i.e. Acts of Parliament, which have both extended and modified it, and have fixed the fines and penalties for its infraction. They have also mitigated its seventy, for the old Common law was very strict and hard and narrow, and often here harship upon these who were little to blame.

As an instance of the seventy of the Common Law, you may perhaps know that if a man borrowed money and failed to ripsy his debt when he had promised to do so he could be east into prison and their kept until the delit was paid. You may think this an extremely feelish proceeding, for how could a man be expected to pay his debt if he were kept in prison and so prevented from following his trade and earning money? Nevertheless, it is not long since hebbers trisons were abolished. Those of you who have read Dickense 'Luttle Dornt' and the "Pickwick Papers' will recall that the famous author there describes with his customary vigour and vividness, the missip of the imprisoned delitors, and the deplorable condition of their prisons.

EQUITY COURT OF CHANCERY

Now there were often occasions when people accidentally broke the Common Law and became highle to so were penalties out of all proportion to their off nee, or perhaps they became the victims of some set of oppression by n nich and more powerful neighbour for which the Common Law afforded no redress. In these cases what were they to do? The Liw offered no runedy, and so they

petitioned the King to interfere on their behalf, and to grant them relief from the unreasonable fives or penalties to which they had become liable, or to protect them from the oppression and rutblessness of some powerful personal enemy who threatened to deprive them of life or limb or livelihood. The King generally handed over these petitions to his Chancellor, who, as you will remember (see p. 42), was in early times a clorie. Thus the Chancellor became the administrator of the Royal Favour or "equitable jurisdiction of the Sovereign" as it was called.

When-as often happened-there was no law to fit the case, or when the Common Law Courts could not give adequate (Latin acques) relief, the Chancellor's Court (or Court of Chancery as it was called) stepped in and secured Equity for the sufficier. For generations there was a lively jenlousy between the Courts of Common Law and the Court of Chancery. The former objected to the interference of the latter, and watched the administration of Equity with a dislike that they did not conceal. The "equitable jurisdiction" of the Court of Chancery was founded on the supposed superiority of moral right over the strict letter of the law, and as Head of this Court the Chanceller was often spoken of as "the Keeper of the King's Conscience." You will gather then from what has been said, that the Court of Chancery or of Equity (for it is called by both names) was started with the idea of relieving the inequalities of the Common Law and of doing justice for the poor and oppressed. But it became, unfortunately, as the centuries rolled away, very dilatory in its action, and one to which none but the rich could afford to resort.

Those who have read Dickens's "Bleak House" will remember his tremendous indictment of the slowness and costliness of the Court of Chancery. Happily this charge is now a thing of the past. A great reform took place in 1873 when an Act of Partiament—the Judicature Act 1—fused together the Courts of Common Liw and of Equity No long r was a custor in seeking to establish his rights to go bither and thinter—first to a Court of Common Liw, and then to a Court of Equaty until his patience and purse were exhausted. A few memorable wents in that famous Act must be quoted, for every ettizen ought to know, the "goes to law," that he will now have the benefit not merely of the strict his but also of its equitable interpretation. The words referred to are as follows—"In all matters on which there is any conflict or variance between the rules of I quity and the rules of Common Liw in reference to the same matter the rules of Equity shall pretail."

Notwithstanding the fusion of the Courts of Common Law and of Liquity it has been found convenient to maintain the old names, and assign some cases to the "Common Law Sulo" and others to the "Chancery Sulo of the High Court for metages all metags apprehening to Morigages, Trusts and Trustees Parinerships, the rights of Matriel Women, Infants and Lunatics, and the Specific Performance of Custracts are assigned to the Chancery Division of the High Court. Such cases are complicated and telifous, quite units for decision by a jury. Consequently you will not find juries in a Court of Chancery.

COUPT OF KINGS BENCH

The King's Beach Division or "Common Law Side of the High Court of Justice is presided over by the Lord Chief Justice of England. Most of the sensitional crisp you read about in the massagers are tried by Judges of the long a Bouch while the fact that it is it pages on

this side who "go on circuit" to the Assim Towns, [see 100) renders this inneal of the Indicature more familiar. To people generally. In addition to the Kings, Beach, Division and the Chancery Division, there is yet another branch of the High Court of Justice, viz. the Probate, Divorce, and Admiralty Division (see diagrain, p. 111), which gives judgment on disputed Wills, Matrimonial Cises, and Shipping affairs. It has two judges, the senior of whom is called the President of the Division. (?)

ITINERANT JUSTICES

It generally happens that two judges are appointed to each of the eight circuits into which England and Wales are divided; one for criminal cases, one for civil cases. By civil cases we mean those difficulties between man find man which arise when one has a grievance against another -as for instance, when an employee is wrongly dismissed by his employer, or when a person slanders or libels another, or when a dealer supplies goods of an interior quality to those which he promised to deliver, etc., etc. The Assizes meet in every county four times a year, in summer and winter for both criminal and civil cases, in. spring and autumn generally for criminal cases only. The reception by the High Sheriff in his full uniform; the blowing of trumpets when the Judge enters and leaves his gilded coach; the picturesque javelin-men who walk beside it; the solemn service in the chief church; the magnificent scarlet robe of the criminal judge; all this outward show is symbolic of the dignified character of the proceedings, and of the majesty of the law. In olden times the King was accustomed to make a progress through the land dealing justice to his people, and the ceromonious observances still. maintained at the Assizes represent the homogo

originally accorded to royalty. The Judges come from the "King's Bench, that is from the sent of Justice one occupied by the King himself and hence we pay the respect due to them as representatives of the King.

THE JUNES

British partice is renowned throughout the world for its importiality and for its swiftness. It is true that we still sometimes speak of the laws delays and there is doubt is room for an acceleration of the pace at which the business of the Courts is carried through. But notwith standing these defects our system is recognised as one no excelled by that of any other ecuntry in the world Much of this excellence is attributable to the high character of the Bench-as the Jules are collectively called You listo read no doubt in your listories that in early time the Judges were appointed by the King and held office a his pleasure. That was a bad system because a Judge was alraid of being dismissed if he gave a judgment dis pleasing to the Sovereign I ou might search your history book for vourself and find out the name of the great measures in the time of William III which altered this state of things and rendered the Judges irremovable by the Crown except on a joint address to the Sovereign from both Houses of Parliament This grand independence of our Judges enalles them to dispense justice without the fear or favour of anyone, and as no believe in paying them very large ralances to raise them above all is inplation of Iribery, we have secured a judicial system in which corruption such as you may occasionally read of in other lands, is quite unknown. There is no worse state into which any country can fall than when its Indiciary can be bought-that is, when they will take money from one party to deal unjustly towards another. As a good clinear you should be prepared to uphold the dignity of the Bench, by honouring the Judges, and by not gradging what may seem to you their very large salaries. It is of the utmost importance to each of us that the fountain of justice should be kept pure and free from the slightest suspicion of corruntion.

You will read from time to time in the newspaper that His Majesty "has been pleased to appoint" Mr. So and So to the Bench. As a matter of fact the lower or "puisno" Judges are recommended for appointment by the Lord Chancellor, from among the leading barristers, The Prime Minister recommends to the King suitable candidates for the offices of Lords Justices and of Lord Chief Justice. Thus, again, you see that in accordance with our ancient way of doing everything in the name and under the authority of the Crown, the name of the chosen person is recommended to the King for appointment; and the King always appoints upon the advice of his Ministers. To enhance the dignity of their office the Judges of the High Court of Justice are offered a Knighthood. In the Courts they are always addressed as "My Lord." Cutside the Courts they are usually spoken of as Mr. Justice ----The higher judges are also made Privy Councillors, and therefore are addressed as "Right Honourable."

BARRISTERS AND SOLICITORS

The legal profession is divided into two branches— Barristers and Solicitons. Barristers are "called to the Bar," as it is termed, by one of the four ancient and honourable Societies of Lincoln's Inn., the Iuner Temple, whiddle Temple, or Gray's Inn. Leading karristers are raised by His Majesty to the rank of King's Counsel (KC) It is the sole privilege of barristers to appear and plead in the High Court and Courts of Appeal. They are always then robed in black gowns and wear wigs KC's wear black sitk gowns. Solicators are legal agents acting for their clients, and employ barristers when the case requires careful advocacy before the Courts. Solicators are entitled to appear in the County Courts, and Petty Sessional Courts, but even then, in difficult cases, it is usual to employ County-1—as barristers are called Solicitors conduct a vast amount of work that requires appeared training and expert legal knowledge—quite outside the work of the courts which of course are employed solely in deciding different legal knowledge admitted solicators after examination by the Incorporated Law Society, and pay in annual fee to the Courtment for permission to practice.

THE LAW COURTS

When next you visit London you should go to the Law Courts in the Strind, and watch the course of a trial you will learn more from a few hours spent inside the Court than you can learn from reading any book. Remember that the Courts of Law are always open to the public—there is no secret administration of justice in this country You are not likely, however, to so a craninal trial at the Law Courts in the Strand I am should, if you wish to winces a criminal trial, visit the Court when the Assizes are held at your County Town, or the Central Criminal Court at the Old Builey, London which sits every month for the trial of prisoners who are charged with serious crimes committed in or about London

Our legal justitutions comprise many other courts than those so briefly described above.

" . If the suitor is dissatisfied with the judgment of the High Court, it is open to him to appeal to still higher tribunals. He can carry his case to the Court of Appeal. where it will be heard by three " Lords Justices," who are of higher rank and wider experience than the Judges of the lower Courts. Lastly, if still dissatisfied with the result, he can take his cause to the House of Lords, where certain "Law Lords," presided over by the Lord Chancellor. will give a patient hearing to the case and then deliver a indement which is absolutely final. There is no anneal from the House of Lorde. Certain of the Law Lords are chosen because they have occupied, earlier in their career. some high judicial office. They are raised to a seat in the House of Lords, under the title of Lords of Appeal in Ordinary, with a life peerage (see p. 45). Of the Judicial Committee of the Privy Council as a Court of Appeal from the Colonial Courts and for Ecclesiastical. Causes you have already heard (see p. 54).

COUNTY COURSE

If a man owes another some money and refuses to pay, he can he compelled to do so by the Courts of Law. But. if the sum is only a small one many people would rather suffer its loss than he put to so great an expense as would be incurred if the case were taken for trial to London, or even to the nearest Assize Town. To enable small delist to be recovered, as well as other minor disputes to be settled with as little cost as possible, a large number of smaller courts, called "County Courts" were established

in the year 1840. The Counts Court Judges, who are addressed in Court as "your Honour," are appointed by the Lord Clancellor. They each have a "circuit" under their charge, continuing a number of district courts. Lingland is divided into about five hundred districts and each judge holds his Court in each of his districts at frequent intervals. Claims for dubt or damages up to £100 can be tried in the Counts Courts. A jury of eight men may be employed if suitors so desire, in cases where the sum in disjine is over £5, and in cases involving more than £20 the partner of dissuitsfield with the ruling of law of the County Court Judges, may a peal to the High Court of Justice.

PETTE SESSIONS

A great main criminal offences of a less serious character are never brought to the Assirss at all, or to the Old Bulley (see p. 107) but are disposed of locally by the County or Popugh Magistrates (see, p. 05) sitting either in Petty Sessions or in Quarter Sessions. Let us take the lower court first, namely the Court of Petty Sessions. The punishment of perty offences, such as long drunk and disorderly using foul language in the streets picking p. cheta assaults ate etc., are the staple business of these Courts. They also take note of any breaches of the local by laws (see p. 63) and are empowered to inflict fines upon grants who do not send their children to school. The police are very much in evidence in these courts which are in consequence called "Police Courts." When a very greve crime has been committed, the police first bring the prisoner to the Police Court and if the Magistrates, after hearing the charges and examining the witnesses think the case is outside.

110 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

their powers, i.e., is too serious for them to deal with, they commit the prisoner to take his trial at the Quarter Sessions (see next chanter), or, if a very bad case, at the Assizes. The Depositions or Statements made by the accused and the witnesses are taken down in writing, and read aloud to the prisoner, after which they are signed by the "deponents" and sent forward for the use of the higher court. Sometimes, but not if the charge is of a very grave character, the accused is "admitted to buil," that is," the prisoner's friends promise to pay a large sum of money if he does not appear for trial at the specified time. Sometimes the accused's own promise to appear is accepted, and he goes free until the day of the trial. Sometimes again the police have not had time to get the witnesses together and to secure the necessary evidence. The magistrates may not feel inclined to allow the accused to be at large, and they "remand" him, that is, he is kept in prison for a period not exceeding 8 days before being again brought up before the Bench. If important witnesses cannot be found, or if there are other unavoidable delays, a prisoner may be "remanded" several times.

The Courts of Petty Sessions are presided over by two or more unpaid magistrates (i.e. Justices of the Peace), who are not-as a rule-trained in the law. They are, however, assisted by a Clerk who is a lawyer, and as already stated (see p. 65) in London and the large towns where there are many cases daily to deal with, a Stipendiary Magistrate is appointed to relieve the magistrates of the work. There is no jury in a Court of Petty Sessions. The cases are such as can be dealt with by the magistrates alone, and summarily, -consequently this court is often spoken of as a court of "summary jurisdiction." In all the higher criminal courts, however, you will find a jury of 12 men.

The following diagrams show the relative rank of the Courts of Justice in this country -

> Rocta or Louis (Linal Court of Appeal)

Court of Appeal High Court of Justice.

Chaucory Division Alags Bench Division Probate Dirorce, and av en reabile enodwi Admirally Division. circusti

There are also the -County Court Current Sea ince CUTOMAT # (Civil Causs) (Urimmat Cases) Court. Petty Sessions

Ottotions for Discussion and Research

(Criminal Case)

I Which is your nevest Assizo Town? When do the rext Agree benef

2 Where is your nearest County Court, and who is the

County Court Judge of your district? 7 Where is your marrest Court of Petts Sessions? In it presided over by two Justices of the Peace, or is there a

Strendary Magistrate ! 4 What is a Word in Chancery"? (See "Lney

ch pædia Britannies," under hending " Infant") 5 What was the Habeas torque Act of 1679, and what

mehts dies it cours to us! 6 Discuss how far punishment should be (1) retributive,

(2) determent, and (3) reformatory

· CHAPTER X

COURTS AND JUDGES (Continued)

JUSTICES OF THE PEACE

Among the oldest and most valuable public servants in our land are the Justices of the Peace, persons who, hy reason of their local importance, are entrusted with a Commission from the Crown to maintain the King's Peace, and to punish those smaller breaches of the law which we call offences rather than crimes. These magistrates are appointed by the Lord Chancellor, generally upon the recommendation of the Lord Lieutenant of the county, and were, up to quite recent times, always selected from among the county gentlemen of wealth and position. You have learnt, however, that the Chairmen of the County, Borough, and Urban District Councils are, nowadays, Justices in virtue of their office. The very name of Justices of the Peace implies that their first duty is to keep down broils and tumults, or anything that would lead to a "breach of the peace." They had formerly to see that the roads were safe for travelling, and that robbers and highwaymen were hunted out and sent for trial at the next Assizes. Under the reigns of the Tudor and Stuart Kings the number of Justices was increased, and more duties were imposed on them by Parliament until they became practically the rulers of the county,

and when they met (as they still do) at Quarter Sessions, they not only tried the prisoners who were put before them but did many things for the regulation of the affairs of the county. For instance, they used to appoint constables to assist in preserving the peace, and also had charge of the main roads and of the county bridges, and it was the duty of the Justices to see that these were kept in good repair Some of these very considerable powers they possess to this day. Many of their duties however have been placed elsewhere. You have learnt ("ee p 77) that the County Councils nowadays look after the main roads and bridges. The Justices have, however a share of control (see p 78) over the County Constabulary But in other directions they have a consulerable remeat of authority. They can usue "war-rants for the apprhension of suspected people, also "summonses to bring people before them to answer certain charges

A warrant is an order for a suspected person's arrest. A' summons is an order requiring a person to present himself at the Court upon a certain day.

The powers of the Justices are chiefly apparent when they sit at Petty or Quarier Sussions. For instance, if some neighbours dog lit you and you went in fair of being bitten again and your neighbour refused to keep the dog under control you could go to the nearest Court of Petty Sessions and ask the magistratus to issue a "summons" against the owner of the dog. This they would do, and a policeman would deliver the summons at the dog-owners house. At the next sitting of the magistrates the dog owner must appear, or send some responsible person, to explain why he did not keep the dog under control. If he did not appear or send a substitute he could be arrested. If he could not give a

salisfactory explanation why the dog was allowed to be at large, the magistrates might order the dog to be put to death, or at all events kept strictly chained up.

QUARTER SESSIONS

Having learnt something about the Court of Petty Sessions, and of the magistrates who dispense justice in that Court, let us turn to the next of our Criminal Courts, in which the Bench is occupied by Justices of the Peace—those unpaid administrators of the law to whom the country owes so much.

At Quarter Sessions the magistrates can try much more serious offences than those dealt with at Petty Sessions. As their name indicates they are held every quarter, and although two justices are enough to ferm Court, a large number generally attend as the occasion is one of finish importance. The Court of Quarter Sessions is presided over by a Chairman, who is generally a man of high position in the country, and one with a good deal of legal skill—for you perhaps know that it is a tradition ith our land that a county gentleman, with large estates to manage, onght to study the law and be called to the Bary even if he does not practise afterwards.

Town, the Quarter Sessions of the Borough Magistrates are stated to the Bary even if he does not practise afterwards.

Town, the Quarter Sessions of the Borough Magistrates presided over by the Recorder—a barrister of high ding, appointed by the Crown on the recommendation he Lord Chancellor. A jury is usually summoned to the Chairman or Recorder at Quarter Sessions

'ery large powers of punishment—even penal servitude—are entrusted to this court, but murder and some of the very grave crimes cannot be taken at Quarter Sessions and must be sent to the Assizes for trial.

THE TORI-PETER AND GIAND

To serve on a jury is a duty which may, and generall sfees, fall on every citizen at some time or other in his life Junes are always employed in criminal cases at the Asaze and at Quarter Sussions. There is too always a jury a Coroner's inquests and sometimes they are demande in civil cases in the king's Bunch Division at the Lav Courts in London and in the various County Court-Thus you see there are it uty of occasions on which householder may but himself summoned for surv service In London unde I when there are so many courts an where all the very heavy cases are tried-many of their occupying several lays and even we ks-the burden c jury service is very great and tradesmen have sometime been ruined by being kept so long from their busines But thou h these hardships undoubtedly occur, the method of trial by a jury of ones fellow citizens ; rightly regarded as one of the greatest bulwarks of or ancient liberries

In Ingland Wales and Ireland the jury is chosen be of from a long list of people living in the neighbourhoo. In a criminal tiral it is the jurys duty to hear all that is add for and against the prisoner or defendant to listen twhat the judge tells them about the law and then to so whether they think the prisoner 'guilty or' not guilty A very trivial payment is made to jurors—Is a day, thoug special jurymen," drawn from a higher rank in life receive 21s a day.

The great use of a jury is to determine questions (fact. When a number of men are taken at random, is very mulikely that they are all friends or enemies of the parties. It is much more likely that they will I

116 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

unknown to them, and therefore will form an impartial tribunal.

At present no woman ever serves upon a jury. You must decide for yourselves whether you think it would be wise to admit women to this arduous and often painful duty of citizenship.

The juries of which we have been speaking are styled in legal language Petty (i.e. small) juries. There is another jury of which you should know something, viz. the Grand Jury.

Though this is one of our most ancient legal institutions, quite a number of lawyers to-day think it superfluous. No doubt it had its uses in times past, but now, when the

administration of justice is much more thorough, efficient and careful, there really remains very little for a Gund Jury to do. Nevertheless, just before the Assizes or Quy to do. Nevertheless, just before the Assizes or Gunt of the Judge goes very briefly over the charges that are brought against those awaiting trial. The jury sits in private (neither the prisoner nor counsel are procent), and hears only the cylange appears to be well founded they mark "the bill of indictment," "true bill," and the case proceeds to trial. The other hand, if—as very rarely happens—they or the indictment is not borne out by the evidence, k it "no true bill," and the prisoner is at once

the remarkable tenacity with which we English cling to old institutions, we are slow to dispense you the slender services of the Grand Jury.

THE STRONG APR OF THE LAW

You are sometimes told that civilisation has so far advanced that the Law no longer relies upon physical force for its authority, but it is accepted because it is "reasonable," and is obeyed "by popular consent," Do not be under any deliusion upon this subject. The law rests to-day, as it always has done upon physical force The policeman is "the strong arm of the law," the executive officer, who by main force apprehends, and compels the law bretker, whether man, women, or child, to come before the Judge And afterwards it is by physical force that the culprit is heled to prison and compelled to perform distasticful tisks. Even a simple bye law of your town, such as that which directs that no rubbish or offensive matter shall be thrown into the stricts, note for its validity upon physical force. What would happen if you broke this live law ! You would receive a "summons" from the magistrates to appear at their court and answer for your disregard of the bye-law If you took no heed of this summens you would soon find yourself arrested by some stalwart policeman, and before long you would be heavily fined. If you declined to pro the fine, you would be forcilly taken to prison. If you struggled you would be placed in handcuffs. It is the sains with every law you like to name Disobedience to its mandates renders you liable to compulsion by physical force

Seeing that our livs are made in Parliament by the repre-entatives of the people, we are prepared to yield a ready consent to them, and to the application of physical force against those who wilfully break them

The policeman is therefore an officer to whom each and all of us are indebted for the maintenance of the law, and for the apprehension and safe-keeping of lawbreakers, as well as for many other services to the public, such as the regulation of traffic, the protection and restoration of lost

property, etc.

A private citizen has the right, and indeed ought to arrest anyone whom he sees in the act of committing a crime. The policeman, hewever, is endowed with larger powers. He may arrest a man on suspicion, even though he does not know for certain that a crime has been committed; he may even arrest a man simply because he looks as if he were going to commit a crime. In most cases, however, the policeman acts under the authority of a "wurrant" granted by a magistrate.

Special Constables

Even at the present day every able-bodied man is liable to be compelled to serve as constable of his parish, or to find a state of the day of preserving the peace has sometime of great disturbance—as for instance during a general strimery editions. They wear a hadge and are armed with the servery as constables are corolled from among the ord numcheons.

THE D CORONER'S COURT

The Coroner's County of accidents or sudden 18 ms come to his death, whenever there is reason to suspect that a person 18 ms come to his death by eccident or Council, is usually a m ter. A jury of at least

the cause of death. When there is a verdict of murder or numislaughter necessitating the trial of the slayer at the Assecs tile Coroner can find over the writesses to give evidence at the trial and he sends the depositions is the written statements of their evidence, to the Court before which the trial will take place.

Carrously also the Cororer has to held an inquest upon treasure trace that is buried money or valuables that are accelently discovered the ownership of which is not known or is in day ute

AT A CHIMINAL TRIAL

Nothing his been said so far upon the actual procodure inside the court at a trial As all the sensational criminal cases are fully reported in the newspapers an intelligent reader s on becomes familiar with the general method of conductur, a criminal trial You have all read of the prisoner in the dock facing the judge, the jury tu their box on one sile of the judge and the barristers or counsel in win and coun scated in the space between the dock and the Pench lou know also of the awearing in of the jurymen to well and truly try the prisoner at the lar, you have heard about the reading to the accused of the indictment se the charge or arrangement made against him and the question put by the Clerk of Arraigns. Do you plead Guilty or 'Net Guilty 1' These must be quite commonplaces to you if you read the daily papers I on will perhaps also know it at the case for it of prosecution as opened by Counsel for the Crown, and that the witnesses for the Crown are then called and desirre what they know of the circumstances and what tley saw with their own eyes. They must not say what

120 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

they were told by somebody else-that is, they must not give "hearsay evidence". The accused's counsel then "cross-examines" these witnesses, which does not mean that he examines them crossly, but that he is at crosspurposes with them, and so tries to shake their evidence. and to prove that they were mistaken in what they saw, or in what they think are the facts of the case.

Then it becomes the turn of the Counsel for the Defence to call his witnesses in favour of the prisoner, and then for the Counsel for the Crown to cross-examine them. Since 1898.1 a prisoner may give evidence on his own behalf, i.e. he may speak for himself in his own favour. But he must then submit to cross examination by the prosecuting counsel, and unless he is really innocent of the charge, he is much more likely to do himself harm than good by going into the witness box.

. After the conclusion of the evidence the jury are addressed by the respective counsel, and lastly the Judge "sums up," and points out to the jury the strength or weakness of the cases for the prosecution and the defence. He also explains the law to the jury, and finally dismisses them to consider their verdict. The jury are locked up, and no one may speak to them or influence them in any way whilst they are deliberating-often upon the life, and always upon the liberty of the man in the dock. When at last they have arrived at a unanimous verdict,they return to the court, and their spokesman or foreman declares that they have found the prisoner either "Guilty" or "Not Guilty." If "not guilty" the judge instantly discharges the prisoner, and if "gailty" he proceeds to pronounce sentence. The sentence, of course, varies with the gravity of the offence, and with the known character of the prisoner. He may be lightly dealt with, or the 1 61 & 62 Vict, c. 96.

leavest rentence allowed by the law may be inflicted. You must reme abor that the judge cannot do just as he likes—he must not inflictently penalty except that allowed by statute. Nevertheless, judges have a large discrition in the nature and in the severity of the punishments they award.

Until the year 1907, there was no appeal from the decision of the judges in the Criminal Courts, but in that year the Criminal Appeal Act was passed which give to a convicted person for the first time a right of appeal. The appeals are heard by three judges of the High Court who may quash diminish or increase the sentence of the lower court if they deem it wrong, too severe or too leneal.

A CARL ACTION

Though as said above you are very likely to be acquainted with the main f stores of a criminal trial, you may not be equally familiar with the process of law known as a civil action—that is one in which a plaintie seeks to establish his rights, or obtain damages from someone, the 'defendant' by whom he has been injured—either in his business, prop. 11, or person or character

The first step in a civil action is "the issue of the writ." You have here reproduced unactual writ in which the names only are singuressed—the rest being coportion the actual writ in a very well known even which occurred the attention of the court for external days.

¹⁷ E4 VII c 23.

A WELL

In the High Court of Justice, 1909 G No. 1407 King's Bench Division.

BETWEEN A B

and Plaintiff

C---- D----

Defendant

EDWARD THE SEVENTH by the Grace of God of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland, and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, King, Defender of the Faith to

of (here follows C.D.'s address)

WE command you that within 8 days after this service of the Writ on you inclusive of the day of such service you do couse an appearance to be entered for you in an action at the suit of

A---- B----

And take notice that in default of your so doing the Plain diff may proceed therein, and Judgment may be given in your absence.

Witness Robert Threshie Baron Loreburn Lord High Chancellor of Great Britain the 21st day of July in the year of our Lord, 1009.

You see from the above, that the writ is issued in the name of the King, again illustrating the way in which we. English preserve aneient forms and timultions. For originally, every misieded, even a slander, was held to be likely to cause a breach of the King's Pesco, and was an offence against the King's Majesty itself. It was therefore proper for the King to summon the misiener, to his Court, and for the Obancellor who was his Registrar or

Seen tary to see actually to the issue of the writ Indersed upon (i.e. written on the back of) this writ were the words

"The Plaintiff's Claim is for Damages for Blander," and then followed a statement of when and where the shander was uttored

The Defendant upon whom a writ is served—whether he likes it or not—must arrange for—an appearunce to be entered,' that is he must give the Plaintiff and the Crown some neknowledgment that he has received the writ, and is prepared to answer the claim

SUBSECUENC STEPS IN THE ACTION

This first step in the action is followed by a series of other steps. The plaintiff next drives up (a barrister is generally employed to do this work) a "Statement of Claim, which sets out with great precision exactly what the pluntiff complains of, and the n mody that he desires the court to grant. The Defend int then follows with a "Defender," showing as far as possible that the pluntiff has suffered no injury, and really has nothing to complain of

You will not expect this short account of an Action at Law to go into further details

THE TRIAL

Eventually—generally after some weeks or morths, the parties have got everything in readiness, and the case is "put down for trial" and waits its turn in the list. As the dry approaches the witnesses are brought tegether—sometimes they have to be fetched from the provinces or even from far distant parts of the world, and the case

is ultimately called on for trial. The counsel for the plaintiff states the facts to the jury, and then calls his witnesses to verify and support his statements. These witnesses are cross-examined by the defendant's counsel. Then the counsel for the defence opens his case and calls his witnesses, who in turn are subjected to a crossexamination by the plaintiff's counsel. Then each counsel reviews the whole case from his client's point of view; the judge "sums up"; and the jury retire to consider their verdict. In the actual case from which this sketch of these proceedings is taken, the jury found damages for the plaintiff to the amount of several thousand pounds. The plaintiff took his case to the Court of Appeal which disagreed with the court below, and relieved the plaintiff of the payment of the excessive damages which the jury had fixed.

When no jury is employed, the judge alone decides the matter. In difficult cases he often reserves judgment

for prolonged consideration.

In the County Courts the whole procedure is much simplified and shortened, and there is no tedious waiting. The judge hears the case as soon as the parties are ready for the trial.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Where is your nearest Court of Quarter Sessions held?

 If you live in the county, who is the Chairman of your Quarter Sessions; if in a Borough, who is the Recorder?

3. Name some of the Justices of the Peace residing in your locality.

4. What persons—other than women—are exempted from jury-service?

5. "Five shillings and costs, or seven days." This is the

type of antenco often delivered by the magnetates. Discuss the justice of making imprisonment the alternative of men jayment of a fine. In it in accordance with the jumes let of the equality of all near before the layer. Do you see any objection to allowing poor men to be liberated on hail, and all weed to ray off the fine by instalments?

CHAPTER XI

SOLDIERS AND SAILORS

THE BRITISH NAVY

We usually speak of "Soldiers and Seilors," but it would be more correct, perhaps, to reverse the order of their words, and to say "Sailors and Soldiers," for the good reason that the Navy is the "Senior Service," and our, "First Line of Defence"! You will see at once why the Navy must always stand foremost among the armed forces of the Crown. Since Great Britain and Ireland are islands, we rely upon the Navy rather than upon the Army to repel any invasion of a foreign toe, and unless the see were kept free from the warships of the enemy our soldiers would not be able to go to the assistance of any portion of the Empire that might be in danger.

We therefore need a Navy strong enough not only toguard the Homeland from attack, but in time of war to keep open and eafe the "sea-paths" along which trading vessels bring our food supplies and the raw materials for our factories. That is what we mean when we say that it is essential to the very existence of the Empire that the British Navy shall be suprement sea. Statesmen of both, the great parties recognise this all-important principle, and when discussing naval questions in Parliament are ready to sink personal and political, differences, and combine in the maintenance of a powerful fleet. If they disagree at all upon this momentous subject it is only on the question whether the minney voted for the ships is enough, and whether it is being wirely spent.

It has, in the past been the policy of our country to have a fleet strong enough to be a match for the fleets of any two nations that might be arrayed against it. The cry of "two keels to one" means that for every ship built by the next strongest nivel power we ought to build two. But as buttle-hips and crussers have now grown so huge and costly it is becoming a heavy drun upon this country to maintain a Flect which shall be large enough to resist any possible combination of foreign powers and also to protect our colonial possessims Proposals for lumitation of armaments made to other nations have as yet been unsuccessful. It is a great satisfaction to us therefore to in I that Canula Australia, and the other Dominions beyond the Seas are now engaged in discussing questions of nival defence and considering the best methods of co-operating with the Motherland in a great defensive scheme. You know very well that Lugland has no wish to attack other nations and that her sole desire is to be allowed to pursue a peaceful course of social and commercial development. The Dominions share this feeling and are ready to join with us in some cheeral scheme of defence but not of aggression. It is too early to say upon what lines this great defensive scheme will be formulated. Australia at present desires to possess a Navy of her own which would relieve the Imperial Navy from the task of protecting Australia's coasts New Zealand South Africa and recently the Federated Malay States Line with much generosity made presents to the Impural Navy of fully quapped battle-slaps. Canada is now debating the form which her contribution to the general scheme shall take. Many

Canadians think that the best plan would be to contribute yearly a sum of momey sufficient to build three or four battleships, and man them as far as possible with men of Canadian birth, but place them under control of the British Admiralty as part of the British Fleet. Others wish for a purely Canadian Fleet on the Australian model. You will, no donbt, watch with interest the progress of these proposals for creating an Imperial Naval Force for the defence of the Empire.

How the NAVY IS MANAGED

The Navy is controlled in the name of the King by the Board of Admiralty, at the head of which is a Member of the Cabinet (see p. 23) whose official title is First Lord of the Admiralty. He is always a civilian, and sometimes without any practical knowledge of the sea. This may strike you as very odd, but in our country we do not like to entrust too great power to professional soldiers and sailors. The Army and Navy are terrible weapons which ought only to be used in the . last necessity, and we prefer, therefore, to place them in the keeping of civilian statesmen. The First Lord is, of course, advised and assisted by naval officers, of whom the Board contains four. The Senior Naval Lord is always an Admiral of wide experience. He is responsible for the general condition of the Fleet, and regulates its movements, and guides the First Lord in the appointment of the senior officers. The Second Sea Lord deals' entirely with the personnel, and the Third Sea Lord with material. The fourth of the Naval Lords has control of the naval dockyards at Portsmouth, Rosyth, Chatham, Sheerness, Devenport, Gibraltar, Malta, and elsewhere where men-of-war are built or repaired. The Board of

Admiralty also contains a Permanent Scentary, a Civil Lord and a Parliamentary Secretary The latter has especially to look after the financial affairs of the Navy and usually presents the haval Fedemates in Parlies ent At the head of each of the general feets into which the Navy is suldivided is an Admiral, and under him are Vice idmirals and Rear Admirals. Luch man-of war is officered by a Cap aim who is responsible for his ship under whom are commanders hentenants mid shipmen engit ests sormens bestsmins gunners est parters etc (to The crew of each ship is made up of eatlors sometimes calle I lin pickets and of enginers and stekers who take care of the machiners. On every ship also there are a number frien belonging to the loyal Marines These are soldium and sudors too and are very us ful men in led. Their metto is 1801 mare per terrain (b) land and ear) and they are equally at home on both. They go to sea the sail us and when necessary are landed from the ships to fight on alore. Though not belonging exactly to the triny or to the Vary the Royal Marines have become justly famous for their bravery and general efficiency

The Navy is kept up by coluntary enlytinent. No one can be compelled to serve against his will. But this was not always the case during it o long war with I made a century ngo. I chaps you have read in Captain Marryat's stones or clewhere of the pressuray and the foreible wethods employed in these days for securing at le-bodied scamen for the Navy. Those matters belong to a ly-gono system which we trust may never be received Nowadays men culist for five or twolve years and the for the most purt enter the Royal Theet Reserve from which they can be summound for service in time of war. The Coastguards who nyou have probably seen and

who paired our shores day and night, are mother branch of the Naval Reserves. Another valuable source of supply is the Royal Naval Reserve comprising some 27,000 men drawn from the mercantile marine and the fishing feets. Yet another sutall reserve is found in the Royal Navy Volunteers who offer for service either on sea or land.

OFFICERS AND MEN

The officers of the Navy are trained from their boyhood in special schools and training ships. A long and very specialized education is needed to make an efficient naval officer; hence the necessity of commencing his.

career at an early age-about 13.

The total expenditure distributed over the nine years which should carry a naval officer from his entrainee as a cadet up to the rank of lieutenent is about £1000—a sum which compares more then favorably with the expenses incurred in entering other professions. Moreover, the pensions in the Nary are upon a fairly liberal scale and mush, of course, he taken into account when summing up the many advantages which the career offers to boys of ability, good character, and strong physiqua.

... Applications for admission to the Navy should be addressed to the Assistant Private Secretary to the First

Lord of the Admiralty, Whitehall, London, S.W.

The introduction of the contanuous service system has been an immense advantage to the "Lower Deek" in improving the quality of its personnel, and affording to the men what it affords to the officers, viz. the profession and deriction of a lifetime. In the old days there was no assurance of a career to the men. To-day every well-behaved man can rely on continuous employment at good rates of pay followed by provision for old age, combined with many

or portunities for rising to the rank of Warrant Officer, and in certain cases to the commissioned ranks. There is no other service which offers better opportunities than the Royal Navy to well-conducted intelligent men determined to get on. Pamphlets may be obtained at any post office in the United Ringdom explaining in clear language how, when, and when to join the Royal Navy

Related to the Royal Navy though not actually of it are the lower-grade appointments on shore in connection with dockyards, storting as Bay Artitio is and Dockyard Apprentices Lads ent-ring for these appointments must be of good licalth and way good character and between the ages of 11 and 16. It is usual for the Admiralty to offer annually a certain number of nominations for these appointments to the Local Education Authorities throughout the country Selected boys in the secondary and technical schools are recommended by the Councils for these appointments and it would be well for parents and guardians to communicate with the Director of Education for the Bornagh or County, in order to ascertain the conditions under which these situations are offered, and the of portunities for advancement which they afford to boys with a mechanical bent

THE BOTTISH ARMY

The land forces of the United Kingdom consist of the Regular Army and the Territorial Army both of which are mised by voluntary enletting it. In placing our Army upon a voluntary lesses we differ completely from the other great Furepean Fowers who eather compet all makes to serve for some portion of their life with the colours, or resort to "conscription," in which inditary service is determined by drawing lots Of these two methods

Compulsory Service is fairer to everyone, for it is possible under the system of Conscription for a rich man, who has drawn an "unlucky" number, to escape service by paying for a substitute. This is unjust towards the poor man who cannot raise money enough for someone to take his place.

The British Army is very small compared with those of Germany, Russia, and France. As you learned earlierin this chapter we rely principally upon our Navy to protect us from invasion, and we, therefore, keep only. a small "Standing Army" of under 200,000 men, enlisted for service either at home or abroad. Our Empire is so widely scattered that what we most need is a highly trained and efficient "striking force" which can be despatched at a moment's notice to any part of the world where it may be required. Whether our Army is large enough for the purpose it has to serve, and whether in the future we may have to resort to compulsory military service are questions which we cannot discuss here. But mon these matters you will hear much if you only readthe daily papers and listen to the addresses of public speakers and politicians. They are not subjects to be lightly treated, and it will be your part as a thoughtfuland responsible citizen to help by your vote and voice, to settle these difficult problems affecting the welfare of the State.

The British Army belongs, in a special sense, to the people. It exists only by the will of Parliament. This was not always so. In the times of the Stunet Kings the army belonged to the King. It was a royal force rather than a national institution, and was disliked by the people because it was often used to extend the personal power of the monarch. When William of Orange was brought over, and the Stuarts expelled from the kingdoni; a special

clause was inverted in the famous Bill of Pights making it illegal for the Severeign to maintain a Standing Army in limes of peace without the consent of Pailiament. Livery year a fall is now brought into Purlament settling the number of soldiers to be employed, etc., and is present " under the title of the "Army Discipline and Pegulation Act" If for any reason this Act were omitted or forgotten to be passed the Army would be dissolved and the men might retire to their lattice. The Navy, on the other hand is a permanent institution although Parlin ment has to voto every year the necessary funds for its upkeep. But no annual Bill has to be brought in for the regulation of the May The Bill of Rights does not probabit the constant Learn, up of the Navy whether in peace or war for the Navy as you can see could never be used against the recode in the same way as the Army

THE ARMY COUNCIL

Although the King is still nominally the head of the Army, he possesses in reality a very limited authority, and the actual administration and central is vosted in the hands of the Army Council who whilst doing overything in the King's name, are directly under the authority of the Calinut which acts through the Secretary of State for War. Thus again you observe that the Forces of the Crown are under civilian control. The Army Council consists of the Secretary of State for War (who acts as President), four Military Members, and two Civil Members. It therefore follows the pattern of the Board of Admiralty

The military members supervise the several branches into which the business of the War Office is divided. The first military member is called the Chief of the Imperial General Staff. He has the general direction

and control of the Army and deals with preparation. and organisation for war, the training of soldiers, the manœuvres, etc., etc. The Adjutant-General is the second military member of the Army Conneil. He is concerned with the raising and organisation of the military forces at home and abroad, discipline, medical, and sanitary matters, and a mass of other details too numerous to Third comes the Quartermaster-General who mention. has the oversight of the supply of food, clothing, and horses to the army, the settling of the amount of stores that are to he kept in reserve, etc. The fourth member is the Master-General of the Ordnance, whose duty it is to see to the guns and ammunition, and the maintenance of fortifications, harracks, ranges, etc., etc. - The two civil members above mentioned are (1) the Parliamentary Under-Secretary of State for War, and (2) the Finance Member of the Council. Their official titles sufficiently disclose the nature of their duties. Though not technically a member of the Council, the Permanent Under-Secretary to the War Office who acts as Secretary to the Army Council, takes, like most secretaries, an active. part in its work.

The actual command of the Army rests with the generals whom the Council appoint, and the Inspector-General of the Forces reports to the Council upon the

General of the Forces reports to the Countries condition and efficiency of every department.

Ahout a third part of the British Army is regularly stationed in India. To this must be added the Native Indian Army, which is about double the size of the British force in that country. The cost of this army is borne by India itself, but expeditions beyond the Indian frontier are paid for by the home government unless Parliament decides otherwise.

The British Army was formerly organised in three

lines (1) the B gular Army with its Reserve, (2) the Militia, and (3) the Auxiliary Forces (1 commany and Volunteers). It is now organised in two lines only, (1) the Regular Army with its Reserve and Special Reserve (the latter replacing the old Militia), and (2) the Territorial Force or citizen army, constituted out of the old Yeomanry and Volunteers.

Supplementary to the Army, but without definite hability for screen unless otherwise undertaken, are the Royal Military College and Royal Military Academy, and other military schools the Officers Training Corps, the National Reserve, and the officially recognised Calet Units. The terms of service for the regular forces and Special Lescree are laid down in the Permiting Regulations and the conditions of enlistment of the territorial force are contained in the Regulations for the Territorial force All these regulations are published by H. M. Stationery Office, and may be purchased very readily through any bookseller at the cost of a few pence.

THE REQUIERS

The Regular Army consists of cavalry, infantry, artillery, and engineers besides the Army Servico Corps, which looks after matters of transport and commentant. There are also other Departments such as the Army Ordnance Department, the Royal Army Medical Corps, the Army Vetermary Service, etc.

A soldier enlists for 12 years, part of which is spent with the colours, and part in the lessure. During this latter period the men rejenter private life but are little to be called out at any time when their services are required. It is possible for a man to rise in the Army from the ranks, and to become a commissioned officer.

The standard of living, however, set by the officers in certain regiments renders it difficult for a man without private means, under the rank of a major, to make ends meet on his pay. There are, however, many opportunities of serving abroad where the remmeration being on a higher scale, and expenses considerably less, an officer can exist quite comfortably on his pay from the first.

The degrees of rank of commissioned officers in the army are the following:-

Field Marshals,

Generals, Lieutenant-Generals, Major-Generals, Brigadier-Generals, Colonels,

Lieutenant-Colonels, Majors,

Captains,

Lieutenants, }

ants often styled subalterns.

THE TERRITORIALS

The object of the Territorial Army (or "Terriers," as they have been nicknamed) is to provide a force for home defence with no obligation to serve abroad. The administration of the Territorial Force is in the hands of the County Associations at all times other than when called up for annual training in camp, when embodied, or when on actual military service. The Territorials came into existence in 1908, and have supplanted the old Volunteers, whose organisation was not all that could be desired. The Volunteers, must, however be remembered with affection and respect, for they often received but scanty

encoungement from the authorities, and the enthancem they showed in the cause of home diffence, and in rendering themselves efficient soldiers has alone made the more comprehensive territorial scheme possible. The motto of . the Voluntiers was 'Defence not Defiance" and a very good motto too. It would be well for each and all of you to understand that these citizen soldiers whether called by the old name of Volunteers or by the new name of Territorials, constitute the sole barrier between the people of this country and some system of compulsory military service or conscription, such as is employed in other lands. The thanks of the community are therefore due to those patriotic men who devote their leisure to equip ping themselves for the defence of the homeland. With our small standing army it is of paramount advantage to have a body of men voluntarily trained to military duties capable of garrisoning the country in case the regular forces were entaged elsewhere in fighting the enemies of the Crown The Regular Army is not large enough to attend to home defence as well as to the protection of our pessessions abroad. Voluntary enlistment in the regular army connot furnish a sufficient supply for both purposes, and therefore, as said above unless a citizen army of relunteers for lome defence is forthcoming it is fairly certain that this country also would have to introduce some form of compulsery service. Whether that would be good or lad for the country is one of the subjects you will be asked to discuss at the end of this chapter

The men who volunteer for the Territorial Army must attend durils during their lessure hours for a period of at least four years, and are required once a year to undergo 8 to 14 days training in camp. Most employers are, willing to liberate their men for this period without deduction of wages; and indeed it would be deemed disservice on their part to the State to wishfield parmission to undergo this short annual braining, or to make it an excuse for deducting a proportionate amount of wag or salary. It is hoped eventually to raise a Tenitoric Army 300,000 strong possessing its own cavalry, artillery engineers, and other corps and departments.

The Officers' Training Corps, which is a branch of the territorial army is recruited mainly from the Publi Schools and the Universities. The object is to train it members so as to enable them eventually to become Special Reserve or Territorial Officers. There are men inducements offered now in the way of attentive allow anoss to young men who qualify themselves as officer in the Special Reserve, information upon which mapparants, most easily be had by enquiry among friend already in the Territorial Porce. Every Officer under 3 in the Special Reserve receives a retaining fee of £2 a year, which more than covers expenses during his shor annual training, as the authorities sternly discourage an unnecessary expenditure over messes, etc.

BOY SCOUTS

A recent movement inaugurated by General Sir R. S. S. Baden-Powell for the training of hoys in the principles of scouting, and incidentally in drilling accroises and whole some forms of outdoor recreation, has succeeded beyon all expectation. Indeed the movement has spread to foreign lands. A somewhat similar organisation is being also attempted for girls. Objection has been mixed by some people to the Boy Scouts, on the ground that the training savours too much of militarism; but those whe have watched the boy scouts at work realise that the

a outing games provide a healthy outlet for the natural love of adventure characteristic of boyhood, whilst the drilling exercises are devised to strengthen and develop the body and have in them nothing of a distinctive military character A fine effort is made at the same time by the scout masters' and other leaders of the movement to train the boys in habits of respect to elder-, kindness to their fellows, elembraces of person and of language, and above all to truthfulness smeerity and honourable dealing. This moral training is of the highest value, and many a lad who might have drifted into the ranks of the 'hooligans owes a debt of grutitude to the men who spend freely of the r time and money in advancing the cause of the boy so ut General Baden-Powell, in the preface to his book Scouting for Boys, thus describes the work -

"By the term sconting is rount the work and attributes of backwood-men explorers and frontiersmen. In groung the elements of these to boys we supply a system of gimes, and practices which needs their discresand instincts, and is at the same time educative.

"From the boys point of view scouling puts them into fraternity gangs, which is their natural organisation, whether for games, insoluci, or loading, it gives them a smart dress and equipment, it appeals to their imagnation and romance, and it engages them in an active, open air life.

"The method of instruction in 'scouting' is that of ore iting in the boy the desire to learn for himself, and

not by dulling knowledge into him

"From the parents' point of view it gives physical health and development, it traches energy, resourcefulness, and handicrafts, it puts into the lad describine, pluck, chivalry, and patnotism, in a word, it develops 'character,' which is more essential than anything to a lad for making his way in life, and which is yet practically untaught in the schools.

cally untaught in the schools.

"From the national point of view our atm is solely to make the rising generation into good citizens. We avoid military training for reasons given in the book."

THE NATIONAL FLAG

Wherever a British ship sails the sea, whether a stately man-of-war or a humble cargo "tramp"; whereever a British regiment pitches its camp, whether at Aldershot or in the remotest outpost of the Empire: wherever, in fact, British subjects have gained a foothold, there flies the Union Jack-the National Flag. Our hearts warm to it when we meet it in distant lands floating majestically at the peak of some lofty flagstaff. For it speaks to us of home, and we know that we are among friends, and that the language of the homeland is there spoken! The flag is a hand between all good citizens of the Empire. It denotes kinship and a community of interests, it betokens an unquestioned allegiance and devotion to King and Country. We, therefore, respect the flag, and will not suffer it to be treated with indignity. Soldiers and sailors are taught to salute the flag, and this is no empty ceremony, but is full of meaning.

The history of the Union Jack is interesting. In its present form it dates from the year 1801, and signifies the Union of England, Seedand, and Ireland into one United Kingdom: If you dissect the flag you will see that it consists of three super-imposed crosses. First, there is the large red cross in the middle which is shaped thus 4 and which has a white border round it. It is the Cross

of St George, and is emblematic of Faginad. Then you will see that there is a winto cross shaped like this X on a line ground. That is the Cross of St Andrew, and was for a long time he sign of Scotland. And lastly you will see that there is another cross of the same shape as the last, only red upon a white ground. This is the Cross of St. Patrick, the patron same of Ireland.

THE FIRES OF WAR

Happuly to-day in Ingland we know little of the horrors of war and of the mivery and suffering which are its risult. No war can ever be lought without causing pain serrow death and ruin to many, or without leaving beliand it much rancour and iff blood. If you are ever tempted to think that war is a glorious thing or that fighting can over be saything but horrible and eruel try and learn from the accounts of these who have seen real warfare what its results always are and must be

In dealing with the subject of War it is impossible not to recognise that there are some wars which are justifiable properties in the same of glory or aggrandistment are an unmitigated cursa to humant; On the other hand there are cases in which a pople rightly struggling to be free hive had no other course open to their than to throw off the yoke of the oppressor by a sanginiary war. Such wars are justified by postenty and the victorious generals are bailed as liberators of their country. Most of your great civil and religious liberates have been wen by the sword, and at the price of blood. As the nations grow older and wiser they are buppily showing signs of turning may from the horrors of bloodshed and looking to trivitation as a better means of settling disputes. But the

reign of peace is not yet established. Matters involving vital inferests, or national honour are as yet evoluded from the terms of our arbitation treaties. Let your hopes therefore be, that peaceful settlement of international difficulties may increasingly prevail. But whilst cherishing this fervent espiration, do not forgot the great lesson which history teaches, viz. that war from time to time appears to have been an instrument in the hands of the Almighty for chastising those nations that have grown rich, selfish, idle, corrept, and neglectful of their duty towards God and their neighbour.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Discuss the value of Australia's scheme of Naval.

Defence. How far would their fleet be of any use if the
British Fleet were first annihilated?

2. From Whitaker's Almanack assertain the names of the various fleets into which the Navy is divided: How many men are there in the Navy excluding Reserves?

3. What is the approximate cost of (1) a "Droadnought";
(2) a Submarine; and what are the wages and allowances of a blueiseight?

4. What amount of money was voted last year by

Parliament for (1) the Navy; (2) the Army?.

5. Discover from Whitaker's Almanack, or other Annual, the names of the present members of the Board of Admirally, and of the Army Council.

6. Can you suggest any basis upon which Germany and England could agree to a limitation of naval armaments?

7. Discuss the question of compulsory military service. Is there compulsory military service in any part of our Empire? If so, where, and how far is it successful?

and Nelson, and some splendid record associated with Wellington, Harelock, Riberts, and the loss of the "Birkenh ad"

9 What is the V O, and for what is it awarded? What did Napoleon mean when he said that in everyone of his

soldiers' knapsacks by a marshile batea?

10 Are you a boy scout or a member of the O T C ? If

not, why not !

Il Dixius the proposition that the best guarantee of peace is to be prepared for war

peace is to be prepared for war

12 Define Patriotism Is it the duty of a patriot to say,

"My country right or wron, "?

13 What is Martial Law? When is it invoked in civil life!

CHAPTER XII

SCHOOLS AND SCHOLARS

EARLY EDUCATIONAL EFFORTS

· A CENTURY ago the majority of your countrymen could neither read nor write, and the poorer members of the community had little or no opportunity of acquiring it their youth even the harest elements of oducation Whilst some other countries (Germany in particular were steadily developing their educational systems we stood still, doing little or nothing for the education of the masses. In earlier times the monasteries and religious houses all looked upon it as part of their duty to teach the rudiments of learning to those who were anxious to he taught. At their dissolution the schools attached to them were also broken up, and were raroly re-established. It was the great desire of a few noble minds of the time that the revenues derived from the spoil of the monastic houses should be used in part for the continuation of the work of the schools. But this was not done, and nearly all the schools perished. Very few, indeed, of our educational institutions date from before the Reformation. After the Reformation, however, we find a number of Grammar Schools set up in various parts of the country and endowed by pious founders. Many were doubtless "conscience-money." foundations, representing a partial ristitution of the spoils of the ableys and other prereformation institutions. But the Grammar Schools never contemplated what we now call elementary education, and the very poor runly benefited from these foundations. This no doubt was partly due to the difficulty with which the poor could dispense with the scanty earnings of their children who were put to work long before they had had time to acquire even a very small measure of education. This difficulty is felt even to-day, and the attempts made to curmount it will be dealt with in the next chapter.

As industries mult 11 el the pequilation of our country grew reprilly but the x ho is did in the expose with the increase and thus a truly deplicate state of things arose. It is eafe to say that about 1800 the education of our misses was about at the lowest elb it ever reached in this or any other civilised country. Crimo—the product of ignorance as well as of impustion—dourished, and the prisons were cheked with immates. The hearts of many carnest and truly patri tie men were touched by the putiful agorance of the phylo. Thro at least of these men must be named—Lobert Kaikes Joseph Lancaster, and Dr. Andrew Bell.

Pobert Raikes a printer of Gloucester, opened in 1780 the first Sunday School in which in addition to religious instruction reading spelling and writing were taught. This short hour of weekly education was all that was received by many of those who joined in the subscription to creek in 1880—just a century later—the incomment you now see standing on the Victoria l'inlankment dedicated to the memory of the founder of Sunday Schools.

"BRITISH" AND "NATIONAL" SCHOOLS

To the efforts of Joseph Lancaster the foundation of the British and Foreign School Society in 1808 is due: In many towns and villages, humble places of instruction known generally as "British Schools," were exected by this excellent and philanthropic organisation. Three years later the activity and enthusiasm of Dr. Bell led to the foundation of the "National Society for the Education of the Poor in the principles of the Church of England." Numbers of "National Schools" were established by this Society, and thousands of people still living owe what little instruction they ever received to the British or to the National Schools. These two famous. Societies are still in flourishing existence, but their. activities are now directed in the one case to the management of certain Training Colleges for Teachers of which we shall speak later, and in the case of the National Society to the protecting and aiding of Church of England Schools and Training Colleges. Following the example of these two Societies, the Roman Catholics and Wesleyans established similar Societies to look after the interests of their own schools.

For long years these pullanthropic hodies received no recognition from the State, and relied solely for their support upon voluntary subscriptions (hence the term "Voluntary Schools") and upon the small fees—generally twopence per week—paid by the scholars. There was no compulsory attendance in earlier days, consequently many solidsh or neglectful parents never even attempte to secure for their children the slender advantages which these schools offered.

In 1833 the Government for the first time voted who

many people then thought a very large sum, viz £20,000, for the building of more schools, and from that year forward the grants have steadily increased, until to-day they are counted in millions of pounds per annum. To administer the grants a Committee of the Privy Council (see p. 54) was established in the year 1830, and until 1900, when the present Board of Education was set up, all matters appertaining to the expenditure of the grants and management of the public elementary schools were done with the sanction and in the name of the 'Lords of the Committee of Council on Education'. This combrons system with its laboured nonconclature is now sucptume.

It would be a long and intricate history to recount from 1833 onwards the difficulties that had to be overcome before the people of this country secured a thoroughly efficient public educational system. A few of the early efforts ought however to be monitioned

RAGGED SCHOOLS

In 1844 the Ragged School Union was established, and until the presung of the Education Act of 1870 continued its voluntary educational work. The "Father of Barged Schools' was John Pounds a shoemaker, of Portsmouth, who in the early years of the 19th century devoted himself to the improvement of the outcast children in his noglibourhood. Though its educational work is now in other hands, the Bagged School Union still exists, and does excellent charitable work in proving clothes for deserving necessitous children, etc. As an outcome of this movement, and largely through the Chirts of Missi Mary Carpenter, Lord Shaftesbury, and others, "Industrial" and "Reformatory" Schools (of which we shall

have more to say later) were erected to prevent crime, and reform child criminals.

Our "Industrial" schools are the direct descendants of, and some of them now actually occupy the premises or the sites of the criginal Ragged Schools. Unlike the Reformatories, Industrial Schools have, not any close association with prisons, and it will clear up your ideas on this important subject if you realise that the function of the Industrial School is to reclaim youngster who are beginning the downward path towards criminal life, whilst the Reformatories deal with young delinquents who bare been actually guilty of some criminal offence. We shall learn more of these excellent institutions in the chapters on The State and the Child.

BEFORE 1870

Much of the elementary "education" in the earlier days of the last century was furnished by private

enterprise.

You would hardly credit the deplorable condition of this so-called "private schools" in existence before 1870. Anybody was thought good enough to teach children. One of the Assistant Commissioners appointed to inquire into the whole subject said—"None are too old, too poor, too ignorant, too feeble, too nuqualified in every way to regard themselves, and to be regarded by others as unit for school keeping." Domestic servants, barmeids, small shopkcopera, bedridden consumptives, cripples, discharged soldiers, people in receipt of outdoor relief, men. and women of seventy to eighty years of geg., people who spelled badly, who could hardly read, and who could not cliner at all, were found "keeping school" in all manner of dismal, dark, and ill-ventilated places, kitchens,

bedrooms, outhous es, etc. It was not only in the villages, but in the great towns and eithes that such a reandalous state of things as above out lined was permitted to exist The village "Dame Schools," much as they have been riducibled for their inclineare, were, as a matter of fact, among the best of their kind, for the old woman who taught her little flock was generally selected, and assisted by the parson or squired on the ground that she was a little better instructed than her neighbours. Whereas in former years it was just a mere chance whether a decent school happened to be within access, it is now enacted by Parliament that an efficient public elementary school shell be brought within reach (not over 3 miles distant) of every child in the kingdom, and that every boy and girl between the ages of L and 14 shell have a right to a free place in that school.

1870-1902

You, who now enjoy educational advantages of which people in those days scarcely dreamed, would be surprised and sheeked if you were to red of the immense opposition with which the suggestion of compulsory education was greeted, when Mr William Edward Forter—whose statue you will find on the Victoria Embankment in London—introduced his famous frigation Bill into the House of Commons in February, 1870. That Bill which became an Act-1 in the animum of 1870 set up "School Biomis," elective bodies charged with the provision and oversight of public elementary schools (hence the term "Board Schools") in districts where the voluntary school accommodation was usuafficient for the needs of the neighbourhood. In 1876 compulsion was legalised

and School Attendance Officers were appointed to cell upon, and arge all parents to send their children to school. Compulsion was applied gradually. Each district was at first allowed to use its own discretion, and to pass such byo-laws as it thought fit to ensure the attendance of the children. As you might expect some phases were not as strict as others, and in 1880, an Act¹ made it compulsery upon all local education authorities to frame bye-laws and to enforce them. At first education was not given free of charge, nor was it until 1891 that every child, could claim a free place in the Elementary Schools.

For many years the Board Schools and Voluntary Schools existed side by side, and children could be sent either to the one or to the other; but as the Board Schools had the rates behind then as well as government grants and pupils' fees, they were abls to make themselves highly efficient and attractive, whilst the poorer voluntary schools (which were always attached to some religious body such as the Church of England, or the Wesleyans, or Roman Catholies) had no money out of the rates, and depended solely for their support upon the government grants supplemented by voluntary subscriptions, together with the small fees charged to the scholars. It is easy to understand, therefore, how little by little the Voluntary Schools found themselves under a heavy strain. Subscriptious fell away, and they lunguished simply for lack of money. For many people thought that, being forced to pay rates for the support of the Board Schools, they ought not to be expected to subscribe also to the Voluntary Schools.

At length in December, 1902, an Act was passed which placed the Voluntary Schools also "upon the

rates" This famous Act 1 made many other alterations in the then existing practice. It swept away the old School Boards, and transferred the control of their Schools to the Local Councils The old "Pourd Schools" are therefore now called "Council Schools," and since they have been provided ont of public money they are often termed "provided" schools. The Voluntary Schools being no longer entirely supported by subscriptions have also lost their old title and are called "non provided" schools since they were for the most part originally built, and maintained out of money not provided by the State Other reforms also were effected under the Act of 1902 On the principle that there shall be "no taxation without representation ' the Local Councils have obtained a certain degree of representation upon the Boards of Managers of the "non provided" or voluntary schools, but not complete control. The conneils, for instance, have no voice in the nature of the religious instruction maparted in the "non provided" schools, nor do they appoint the teaching staff

At present, theu, you will have gethered that the cost of elementary education is defined partly by government grants, and partly by rates levied by the local authority—in Boroughs by the Town Councils and elsewhere by the Urban District Councils, or County Councils. Of the powers of these bodies over elementary education you are already familiar by what you have read in Chapters VI and VII.

AT and A

INSPECTOES AND THE CODE

Over the many thousands of public elementary schools, the Roani of Education exercises control and oversightoversight by means of the Inspectors who are the "eyes and ears of the Board," and control by refusing to pay the grants when the Inspectors report that the teaching or equipment or buildings are unastifactory. Every year the Board issues a book of regulations called the Code for the guidance of teachers, managers, and inspectors clike. In such manner the efficiency of our educational system is ensured.

SCHOOL AGE; HALF-TIMERS

Before 1876, when compulsory education first became general, a child of 8 years might go to work as a "halftimer." In 1880 the age limit was raised to 10. Public opinion has slowly come round to the view that it is too soon to allow a child to begin earning a living at the age of 10, and the age-limit has been gradually raised. As matters stand to-day, no child may be sent to work before the age of 12,1 and every parent must send his children to school from the age of 5 to 14 unless he can secure exemption on certain grounds. Thus it is possible for children under 14, but over 12,1 who have passed a certain standard of attainment, or who have made a certain epscified number of attendances, to go to work as "half-timers." They may get total exemption under 14 if the Education Committee think that the proposed employment will be "beneficial" to the child. Thus it happens that in many textile and rural areas there are few children over 13 in the schools. The majority of Local Education Authorities regard the "half-time" system as opposed to the best interests of the child. Boys and girls who attend for only half the day cannot make much progress in their studies. Nor is the system good for the discipline and general tone of the school for reasons you can easily think out for yourselves.

1 11 if employed in Agriculture, by 62 & 63 Vict. c. 13.

A good and wise parent will strain every nerve to allow his children to stay as long as possible at school Now that there are "Ex Standard VII Classes," "Central Schools," and "Municipal Secondary Schools," which carry education to a much higher grade, and now also that the Local Education Authorities offer Scholarships and Maintenance Allowances (and valuable Bursaire's for these who wish to enter the teaching profession) whereby the intelligent and industrious can continue their education practically free of east it would indeed be a pity to deprise a bright and promising child of these great advantages by sending, but forth into the battle of life carlier than is absolutely necessary. Some young folks are, however, obliged by poverty to leave school at the earliest moment, and with a very imperfect education. For such as these most Authorities provide excellent Evening Schools.

EVENING SCHOOLS

As a result of the widespread feeling that 14 is too young an age for a child to cease its education, in all our leading towns and cities the Local Education Authorities have established Evening Schools, where young men and women can continue their studies in their spare hours. It in doubt requires straight of will and of purpose to go to school again after a hird day's work, but the boy girl who is determined to selection in life will make the effort, and hundreds of people owe their positions to the howledge and skill acquired in Leening Schools and kindred sustitutions. A youth of 14 who has no settled object in life, and who less little or no ambition to "get on," too often drifts into missipher in the evenings.

I rom such are drawn the "hooligans of the streets.

and it is, therefore, believed by all social reformers, and by very many other people, that the time has come to compel every one to continue his education for a year or two after leaving school, by attending either day or evening continuation classes. We should not be the first country to adopt legislation of this kind.

Evening Schools now exist of every type and grade, from simple classes where the defects of clementary education may be remedied, up to the Technical Schools in which is provided instruction of the highest order. A hoy in a large town may thus pass from the Evening School in his old day school, to a branch Technical School, or to a Commercial Evening School, and thence to the great Technical Colleges and Schools of Commerce. There is no lock of opportunity—in the towns at least—for an industrious and amhitious youth to improve his knowledge and his efficiency, and his position in life, through the agency of these Evening Schools. In London the "Polytechnics" are doing magnificent work of this kind for those who desire to extend their technical, scientific, or literary knowledge.

TEACHERS AND TRAINING COLLEGES

In those far away days when the British and Foreign, and National Societies began their beneficial work, thero were few or no competent teachers to be obtained; and both Lancaster and Bell adopted what is called the "monitorial system," that is, the older children were made "monitors" or instructors of those still younger.

This, as you may be sure, was not a very efficient plan, but it was the best that could be devised at the time. The paid apprentice or "pupil-teacher" system was next introduced in 1846, and held the field for a long time.

But as the demand grow for Letter methods of teaching the time arrived when the need of institutions for professional training legen to be felt. There are now in cristence many splandid Training Colleges in which young men and women receive their seademic aid professional training before proceeding to their work as teachers in the public elementary schools. The Training Colleges are a sually in close connection with either the National, or British or Loronga Secretars of which you have already heard (see § 147) or are maintained by education authorities or again are justs of a University Those coming under the two latter heads are undenominational in character.

Of the excellent opportunities open to young people of both enter who desure to enter the set clastic profession we shall have something to sty in the next chapter when speaking of the Educational Ladder. In a community of intelligent people no one should be more highly valued and honoured than the teacher for it is he who in a greater degree than any other chaptes the character of the entirens of the future. Good entrenship should begin in the school, and show itself in obscinence to and respect for the feether, and in a willing submission to all rules and regulations. The latter are just as necessary for the corporate life of the school as the laws are necessary to the corporate life of the nation.

QUESTIONS TOE DISCUSSION AND PEREARCH

I is there a "British" or a "National" or a Catholic School anywhere in your neighbourhood? Do people still speak of it as a Nolantry Cobool, or do they term it a "non-provided" School? How many Managers is at and what proportion are as pointed by the Local Council?

156 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

- Where is the nearest Council School? 'Is it still ever called a "Board" School?
- 3. What is the amount of the Education Rate in your Borough or District?
- 4. What is meant by the "Conscience Chase" (See Section 7 of the Act of 1870, or Section 4 of the Act of 1902.)
- Discuss the question of the responsibility (1) of the Parent; (2) of the School, for the religious instruction of the child.
- Make a list of all the Educational Institutions in your town and the objects aimed at by each.

CHAPTER XIII

SCHOOLS AND SCHOLARS (Continued)

LABOWED SCHOOLS

THERE have always been in our country charitably disposed people who have given ir bequeathed money for the foundation of schools or scholarships but such charitable action has been individud and local in its character. We find for instance that the town of Bedford has been particularly fortunate in this respect having received large endowments from a wealthy citizen Harpur (or Harper), who had in the time of Elizabeth By industry and talent William Harpur rose to be Lord Mayor of London, and after attaining wealth and fame he granted a piece of find with school buildings upon it to the town of his birth. Morcover for the support of the school, and for other charitable objects he left thirteen acres of mendow land in the parish of St. Andrews, Holborn, London This land is now covered with buildings, and is immensely valuable, and yields a rental of many thousands per annum. The funds are administered by Trustees, who have been able-so great is the incometo provide Redford with many institutions of every educational grade, for children of both sexes belonging to all classes of society I'ven 'Fabilitions' to the Universities are provided out of the "Harpur Trust" Though Bedford has been specially favoured in

educational eudowments, other towns have also to a less extent been furnished with schools and colleges by Founders who desired to benefit and be remembered by posterity. Consequently we find the Endowed Schools built in most unlikely places, in small towns and villages. important perhaps, in the eyes of the founders, but remote from the great centres of population. The new industrial cities that have sprung up during the last century frequently lacked an endowed school, and until the State of late years took in hand the supply of secondary as well as elementary education, these towns had to get on as best they could with "private schools" (i.e. schools conducted by private persons for their own . profit), or with such other institutions as the public spirit of the townsfolk succeeded in establishing. In Liverpool, for example, where there was no ancient . foundation such as Bedford enjoyed, we find a band of philanthropic citizens establishing schools. In 1819 they founded the Royal Institution, in 1825 the Liverpool Institute, and in 1840 the Liverpool College-all of which are existing to-day and performing valuable educational work.

What you must understand, therefore, is that for many generations the Endowed Schools, upon which the country chiefly relied for the higher education of its boys (Glid-Schools upon a public basis are of very resent growth), were scattered irregularly here and there, sometimes in tiny country villages (e.g. Seibergh and Giggleswick), just where the original benefactors had phoned them. In places where no Endowed Schools existed the inhabitants depended upon private effort. Rich people, of course, could afford tutors and governesses for their children, or could: send them to the hig bearding schools like Eton, Harrow, Rugby, etc., but the middle and poorer classes

had the greatest difficulty in securing for their boys and girls any sort of higher education, unless they lived in the immediate vicinity of an Fudowed School Even then many parents found the Grammar Schools, as most of the endowed schools were termed, very unsuitable. They had become hopelessly out of date. Many of them were established in the days when Latin and Greek were the only subjects of study, and some were so restricted by the terms of the foundation as to be unable to teach anything beyond these languages Science, mathematics, modern languages drawing music manual instruction, etc., rarely entered into their curricula. The school buildings also were often antiquated in design and out of harmony with modern pleas Nevertheless, with all their limitations, the ancient Grammar Schools did a great work for English education, and numbers of our most famous citizens have been reared within their time honoured walls and nurtured on their classical scholarship

Although the present generation has found tenecessary to alter some details in their original constitution, the spirit of the great Rievind of Laining, of Linsmus, of Colet, founder of St. Pauls, first of the post-Reformation schools, of Lilye, its first High-master, has survived in them to thus day. In the new shape which modern legislation has given to them, the old transmir Schools of the 18th and 17th centuries, drawing their inspirition from the classical models of 10th, Winchester, and perhaps, above all others, from Colet's foundation, are among the most potent factors in modern education.

As fir back as 1818 Parliament had set up a body known as the Charity Commissioners, whose daty it was to inquire into the administration of educational and other charities. In 1864 a Schoola Inquiry Commission was appointed to report upon the measures required for the improvement of Secondary Education, and as a result of their recommendations a body of Commissioners was appointed under the Endowed Schools Act, 1869; with full powers to deal with endowed schools in Bagland and Wales, and to frame "Schemes" for their reconstitution and management. The Endowed Schools Commissioners did a great work during their existence, and restored vitality to hundreds of these antiquated and decaying institutions. In 1874 their work was taken over, and has been continued by the Charity Comusisoners. Boards of Governors have been created to manage the schools, limiting restrictions have been removed, scholarships and free places awarded, and many other valuable reforms affected.

HIGHER GRADE AND OTHER SCHOOLS

The endowed schools were quite insufficient for the many children who wanted and deserved to have their education continued beyond the elementary school. The Grammar Schools were few and comparatively expensive, and many people could ill afford the fees. Another type of school next came into existence. In certain "go-ahead" towns, especially in the North of England, the School Boards, anxious to secure the benefits of higher education for working class children whose parents could not afford high fees, built and equipped "Higher Grade Schools," and by the aid of the grants obtained from the Science and Art Department, together with small fees (about 9d. per week), provided a sort of higher education in which Science and Art subjects predominated. The School Boards did their best, and must not be blamed for sticking closely to "grant-earning" subjects, as the existence of the schools depended on the money so ensued. Most of the old lagher-grade schools have row hen merged into Higher Elementary Schools Control Schools or Municipal Secondary Schools in which it e course of study is much better bilanced and where languages and

literature are adequately represented.

By the funous Act f 1902, of which you have already heard, the County and other Coun ils are permitted to and Secondary Islands in and the Minneight Sciendary Schools referred to above are one of the results of this Act. Large numbers of free place are reserved in the grant-suded secondary schools of r sch lars proceeding from the dimentary schools and even maintained allowances are made in the case of the power children. It is now—in the towns at least—quite casy for bright boys or guils to of this up to the ago of 16 or 17 without cost to their parints an education such as will theroughly equip them for the lattle f life. And you will shortly learn how it is possible for the origit set of their to oldinistill further up the educational lable and even enter the Universities with little or no cost to their parents.

THE UNIVERSITIES.

A century ago there were only two universities— Oxford and Cambridge—in the whole of Ingland and Wales, and the e two were only open to members of the Church of England. To-day Lagland possesses ten innersities and Wales one, all of them open to students of good churactar irrespective of their religious opinions how will see from the following datas how rapid has been the growth in the number of Universities especially since the days when education was made compulsing. In 1852 the University of Dintary received its charter and in 1836 the University of London (reconstituted in 1898). For many years there was no further creation; then they came with a rush. We now have the Universities of Wales. Birmingham, Manchester, Liverpool, Leeds, Sheffield, and Bristol. Other cities are also auxious to possess universities of their own, and you may probably live to see several more created in Great Britain.

University education is not free to everybody either in this or in any other country; and it would cost a great deal of money and increase taxation if we were to allow everyone who wanted, to go to the University free of cost. Sometimes you will hear it said that education should be "free from the bottom of the ladder to the top." That is a subject you will be asked to discuss in one of the questions appended to this chapter. It is certainly not right, however, that university education should be so costly that none but the rich can afford it; and in the newer Universities you will find—thanks to grants of . public money-that the fees are remarkably low and within the reach of nearly everyone. The two oldest Universities are still quite beyond the means of poor . people, nevertheless, the scholarships offered by the various colleges are so many and so valuable, that brilliant pupils of slender means will always be able to enter Oxford and Cambridge at small expense to their parents. ... We have said nothing as yet about the Scottish and Irish Universities. This you will note is a book upon English citizenship, and, therefore, you will have to consult on certain points the editions which apply particularly to Scotland and Ireland. This much, however, you ought. to know, that Scotland is justly proud of her four ancient Universities-Edinburgh, Glasgow, Aberdeen, and St. Andrews which are, and always have been, open to the poor as well as to the rish, irrespective of race or oreed.

Ireland, alast—once the land of learning—has no such happy record, having been torn asunder for generations by political and religious dissensions. She is now possessed of three Universities—Dublin University, Queen's University, Belfard, and the Royal University of Ireland.

Trensport I DECATION

Probably you have heard of the great war between the French and Germans in 1870 1 and of the building up of the German Empire under Kuiser Willelm I and has adviser Prince Biamank and y u may wonder what this has to do with Technical Schools You will soon see At the time of that war England enjoyed such unquestioned commercial and industrial pre immence, that many people were inclined to laugh at the idea of any other nation ever being able to challenge our position So secure did our manufacturers teel in their supremacy, that they neglected to keep their machinery, their methods of manufacture, and their system of trading "up-to date' They looked too often men scientific men as mere faddists, quite unable to point out to n business man anything that was worth knowing or likely to improve established methods of minufacture. Being themselves for the most part ignorant of chemistry and physical science our statesmen and leaders of commerce did not realise how largely Science was destined in the future to revolutionise Industry. In 1870 when we were just beginning to educate our masses, Germany had for at least two generations been quetly at work upon the general education and scientific training of her young people. After the great war with France when Germany became a united nation-previously she had been a

collection of disunited states-she began in real earnest to compete for a share of the trade of the world, with the result that in the "eighties" of the last-century Great Britain awoke to the fact that Germany was becoming a serious rival in fields of industry which the British manufacturer thought were peculiarly his own. At once a cry went up in our land for more "technical education." Up to this time England had been singularly backward in making provision for Industrial Teaching, or Technical Education, as it is often called. Several efforts had been made in that direction, notably by Dr. George Birkbeck, the Yorkshire physician, and pioneer of "Mechanics' Institutes." The Institute which he founded in London in 1824, which still bears his name, and with which for so long he was associated, was the prototype of scores of others which were afterwards established in all parts of the country. For many years the Mechanics' Institutes had a great popularity, but as they received no aid from the State, and as the industrial teaching they provided was insufficient and often faulty, they degenerated for the most part into cheap reading and lecture clubs, where an afternoon or evening might be spent in a pleasant manner. Some of them, such as the Institutes of Manchester, Huddersfield, and Leeds, maintained their original intention long enough to be converted, in recent years, into Technical Schoola. "The ntmost," says Sir Philip Magnus, "that can be said for the Mechanics." Institutions is that they afforded during many years of educational obscurity, a glimmer of light which enabled a few of the more gifted of the working classes to grope after the knowledge they required."

Industrial Teaching in this country received a stronger impulse as the result of the Great Exhibition held in London in 1851. This event has been described as "the starting point in the modern history of Luglish manufactures and aris." The name of Prince Albert husband of the late Queen Victoria will always be remembered in connection with this famous Exhibition and with the beneficial influence it exerted upon industrial progress. It afforded for the first time in history an opportunity of comparing British made goods with those of other nations The comparison-not always in favour of Great Britain-profoundly affected the industrial education of our country The profits of the Fululation amounting to nearly £200 000, were supplemented by a Larliamentary Grant and the sum was sunk in the purchase of the land upon which now stand all those buildings, the I yet College of Science the Central Technical College and the noble Museums, which have made the name of South Acusington overywhere famous The Department of Science and Art was established in 1853 and firmshed with money by the Government, began in 1850 a system of grants for Science. and Art teaching throughout the country Such then, very briefly was the condition of technical education when, about 1880 the country awoke to its insufficiency Technical Institutes and Technical Schools were built

Technical Institutes and Technical Schools were bind in feverish haste and everybody hoped that our industries would now be placed upon as scientific a basis as these of Germany. In 1890, under the Local Taxistical Act, considerable sums (originally intended to compensate publicans for the loss of their heceness and therefore often called "the whisky money") were placed at the disport of the newly created County Councils (see p. 76) with a start to the furthersance of Technical Education. Education is, however a plant of slow growth, and technical instruction—it was soon foun 1—could not be given in a hinry. Competent teachers and the right methods of technological teaching had first to be discovered. More

than that, the pupils needed a hetter groundwork of general education upon which to build the technical knowledge. Consequently progress was slow, and much of the early effort was wasted. Technical teaching must show the connection hetween principles and practice, and the technological teacher ought to be a master of both. Practical workshop experience should be followed by a study of the theory—each keeping pace with the other. That is the method now adopted in the laboratories, workshops, and becture rooms of our Technical Colleges and of the Polytechnic Institutes of which we shall shortly speak.

The right principles upon which to proceed have been now learns; and although industrial teaching is still in the process of evolution, and the various details here yet to be co-ordinated into a complete system, the influence of the day and evening technical schools and classes is, already making itself folt. Particularly is this the case in the north of England, where the evening schools of all grades are linked up into a graded system with the Technical Colleges and Schools of Commerce at the apex.

As you learnt in a previous chapter, the County and County Borough Councils are now responsible, under the 1902 Education Act, for the higher and technical education, in their respective areas, and for these purposes they are empowered to levy a small rate, in addition to the motiety received from the Government.

MODERN LANGUAGES

In one branch of technical knowledge our business men are as yet far behind our great continental rivals and that is in our knowledge of foreign tongues. The young people in this country, who hope to rise to some

post higher than that of the artizan, do not study modern languages to the same extent, and with the same keenness as our friends abroad Take for example, the work of a commercial traveller The trade of a country depends, as you perhaps know, largely upon the ' pushfulness" of commercial travellers, who go everywhere with samples of goods, trying to induce people to become customers Now, unless a commercial traveller can sweak some foreign tongue he will not find it casy to "push ' his firm's goods in a foreign land Manufacturers of (let us say) cotton goods, need men who can travel into distant countries and speak to the people in their own linguage, and sell to them in the weights and me isures and comage with which the substitutes are familiar. What would you think if a man came from France, and addressing you In the French language tried to sell you cloth at so much a metre, or wine at so many france per hectolitre? You would probably ask him first of all to speak English, and then to translate his weights and measures and coinage into lbs., yards, and shillings. That is where Fuglish commercial travellers are apt to fail. So few of these "ambassadors of trade are capable of conversing with foreigners in their native tongue The Germans have recognised for many years the necessity for training their clerks and commercial travellers in business methods, and have established schools and colleges where n youth may study not only foreign languages, but also the commercial usages of, and the particular exports and imports of the leading countries of the world. Some day we shall have many of such schools and colleges in this country, but, menushile, the trade of Great Britain suffers for most of more skilful and accomplished linguists You may be interested to learn that next to I aghish

You may be interested to learn that next to legish the most important of all tengues for mercantile purposes is Spanish, that being the language of the vast continent of S. America—'a great market for Bittish goods. French and Genman are, of course, of very high value, but to the commercial travellers who can speak Spanish or Russian the richest opportunities are undoubtedly open.

It is not for business purposes only that one ought to learn foreign languages. When you grow up you will probably travel for pleasure on the continent of Europe, and unless you can understand, and to some extent speak a foreign tengue, you may find yourself in difficulties. Moreover—and this is by far more important—to master a foreign language affords an excellent mental discipline. It unleeks to you many treasures of literature of which you would otherwise remain ignorant. Let each boy and girl determine to acquire theroughly at least one other language beside his own. Now that day and evening classes in modern languages are found in practically every Technical Institute and Evening School, there is no lack of opportunity. And speaking of such opportunities brings us to the consideration for a moment of those twelve institutions in London known as

THE POLYTECHNICS

In our country, as, peahaps, you have already noticed, the State is very slow to take up any work which can be undertaken by private enterprise, and the early Mechanics Institutes, and the first of the Polytochnics—the one in Regent Street, London, founded by that great philanthropist Mr. Quintin Hogg—were established by private individuals who perceived the need among the working population of technological instruction. There are now many Polytechnics, supported laugely from public funds. The range of their activities is very wide, comprising both

day and evening classes. Their class rooms, laboratories, and workshops are througed with young man and women. Now that the old apprenticeship system has almost disappeared, the Technical Institutes and Polytechnics are fulfilling a most valuable function in thus training young artizans in the securific details of their craft. Lary young workman ought to spend his day partly in attending a technical school and partly in the workshop. Many imployers fully recognise this fact and arrange for their apprentices and youngs in those and arrange for their apprentices and youngs in the day and arrange for their apprentices and youngs in the day to the technical school without any loss of ways. The pasters who in such cases usually pay the small fersiching differ the instruction. A bright and industrious youth his their fore, at the present day, opportunities of advancingent such as were denied to an earlier generation.

The Polytechnics and similar institutions make excellent provision also for part students. Special teaching is given in demositie sal jects such as cookery, laundrywork, sick nursing millionery dressniking, uphoblery, needlowork, etc. There is, moreover, a recreative and sound side to the work of the Polytechnics which is intended to bring the students into pleasant social nuter-course with each other. They make themselves the centre of much of the social, as well as the intellectual life of their students. No institutions in our country are performing a finer work than the Polytechnics in training the youth of both sexes to become shifful and efficient workers, and thereby valuable extrems.

Sperling at the Cambridge University Extension Sperling at the Cambridge University Extension Summer Meeting in August 1900, Sur Hulip Magnus, M.P., and "When one considers the advantages which are offered to workmen and appendices in any of our newest Technical Schools, we recognise the immutuse progress

that has been made since Birkbeck first lectured to his artizan audience. It is not only that the teaching embraces new subjects never thought of as susceptible of educational treatment a century ago; it is not only that the instruction is given in palatial buildings fitted with adequate machinery and with every mechanical appliance for illustrating the lessons; but the methods of instruction are altogether new, designed not only to inform but to train, and to exhibit in a manner previously not thought of—the connection between practice and theory.

"Comparing the condition of education now with what it was in the beginning of the century, the contrast is most marked. An advanced elementary education in which manual training largely enters, is afforded absolutely free to every child in the realm. Facilities of secondary education by means of scholarships are within reach of nearly all who are fitted to profit by it. Technical and commercial instruction adapted to the requirements of the industrial classes, and to the different compations in which they are engaged, is provided by local authorities, and University Education, including engineering in its widest sense, is available for a large and increasing proportion of the young men and women of the country?"

If this was the position in 1900 before the passing of the Act of 1902, to which so many references have already been made, to a still greater degree is it true to-day. Let each of you compare the advantages of the present time in respect to the facilities for education, with those of the bygone years described in the early part of Chapter XII., and draw for yourselves the lesson which

such a comparison affords.

TRY EDUCATIONAL LABOUR

What is meant by the educational lidder or "lighway" as it is sometimes called? Surely we mean the opportunities afforded by the State to young people to climb from the primary schools up to educational institutions of the highest rank. I'ich people can afford to send their children to any school or college they prefer, so the 'ladder" concerns only those boys and girls who have no other capital than their own abilities From what you have read in the proceeding pages you must have recognised that the children of to dry have advantages and opportunities of advancement which their forcumers never enjoyed. A boy or gul therefore, who courageously determines to "get on will find that the County and other Councils, as well as the Government, offer all manner of scholarships exhibitions, grants and burearies by which deserving pupils can pass from lower to higher places of education-even up to the University Furthermore, travelling expenses maintenance allowances, and empluments of one sort and another are available for the assistance and support of the young student who otherwise would have at once to begin wage-carning You would be surprised also to learn what a number of public bodies there are as well as private and philanthropic societies and guilds, all ready to help those who will help themselves. It would occupy a volume to enumerate them Ask your parents or guardians to write to the Director of Education for your County or Borough, roquesting him to send you all pamphlets, etc., published by the Local Education Authority, describing the opportunities offered by the Council in the way of higher and technical education. If you live in London send to the L.C.C. Education Offices, Victoria Embunkment, for the

179 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

handbook (by post 3d.) showing the Scholarships, etc., open to persons of hoth sexes. Practically all Councils offer Minor and Major Scholarships—the former to enable pupils to proceed to his base of his process of his base colleges and the latter to colleges and places of his base colleges.

colleges and places of higher education, If you have a gift for teaching-and inless you have special aptitude do not take it up as a profession-you will find that the State is prepared to pay practically every penny of your education from childhood up to the moment when you emerge from the Training College as a fully certificated teacher (see p. 155). If you wish to learn a trade, or how to farm, there are Trade Schools and Farm Institutes now being established up and down the country, as well as the Technical Institutes and Polytechnics already described, all of them open with little or no payment to industrious and well-behaved pupils. In some cases actual money payments are made to the students to compensate for the loss suffered by being temporarily withdrawn from a wage-earning employment. When about to leave school be sure to acquaint yourself with all the opportunities afforded to you for instruction in the employment of your choice. Think of these things beforehand. Remember that the worst thing that can happen to anyone is to drift into a "blindalloy" occupation, that is, one that leads nowhere. With a skilled trade at his finger ends a man can always earn his living in whatever country he ultimately settles, whereas one without a trade is often cast adrift on the world to become a burden upon his friends, or perhaps upon the rates.

We will conclude these chapters on Schools and Scholars with a short homily which you can skip if

you like.

A LITTLE HOURT

Do not think that education ends with school or college life. No greater mistake could be made. Your education ought never to cease. A good citizen will try to keep abreast of modern movements in politics and society, and shoul I, therefore always be learning. Self-clucation is the best of all educations and a boy has not got the best out of his schooldrys unless he has learnt hore to learn. There is no excuse for anyone to remain an agnoramus now that Free Libraries Art Galleries and Museums are found in overy town and in almost every village, as well as the Evening Classes already named

It is a wise and with utterance which declares that an educated man is one who knows " everything of something and something of everything ' A person who is master of some art or craft can face life with equanimity There is always work waiting for him to ilo A good workman, or a fine artist, or musician, or a gifted teacher enriches the community in which he dwells. He contributes to the common good. And that is why the State and the Municipalities are willing to expend such very large sums of money-all of which come, as you have already learned, out of the pockets of the taxpayers and ratepayers
-upon education "Education leads to light," were the words attered once to the writer of this book by a poor Isbourer This is what it ought to do even if sometimes it fails. We know from experience that crime diminishes when schools are opened and that since the Education Act of 1870 many big presons in this country have been closed and pulled down. These things are symbolical Money apent over schools is a good investment if, thereb), boys and girls are trained up to be better workmen and better estizens. If it does not do this it has failed in its purpose. It would indeed to a miscrable result if a good education were to turn a promising artisan into a discontented loafer with a distaste for manual labour. Education does for the mind what the girndstone does to the steel. By sharpening the intellect, as well as by training the reasoning faculty, and by widening the outlook, it renders man more efficient in the performance of his daily task, and of the duties of citizenship—duties which each year become more serious and more complex.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1. Name any Rodowed School to your neighbourhood.
Who was its Founder, and by whom is the school managed?

2. What places of higher education are there in your district, and how is entrance obtained thereto?

3. What is the name and official address of the Director of Education in your Borough or County?

4. What is your ocarest University? Are there any Scholarships from your School to the University?

5. Are there any Technical Schools, Trade Schools, or Agricultural Colleges in your town or county?

6. What do you know of the Workers' Educational Association and of its Tutorial Classes? Make a point of ascertaining all you can about this Association and its work.

7. If you were wishful to become a (c) Teacher; (b) an Engineer; (c) a Farmer; describe in each case the course of education you ought to pursue, and what facilities for such education exist in your locality.

8. Discuss the pros and cons of (a) free secondary; (b) free

university education.

Name some "blind-alley" occupations. Ought the
State to regulate the entrance of children into such occupations?

CHAPTEP VIV

THE STATE AND THE CHILD

THE CHILD WORKER

LESS than a century and the State cared little or nothing for the welfare of Children If the parants of a child were dead or if they were hard hearted or if unal le for any cause to look after the health happiness and education of their offspring there was nobody else to do there things. The State punished with frightful severity the children who straved into evil ways but was quite unconcerned in directing them into the right paths. We have read in Chapter \II of the elow evolution of a system of national education whereby every parent can be compelled to send his child to school between the ages of 5 and 14 and we will now survey briefly what has been done by the State for the chill workers of the community. For you must never forget that the majority of children have to begin wage earning the moment the Liw allows them to leave school

We will also ascertain what methods the State now adopts to punish and reclaim erring children who are entering upon a course of crume. And in each case we will compare the present day methods with those in force in the days of our grandfatters. Perhaps you will then understand why this 20th Century has been called the Children's Century.

You who live in these better days when the law protects these who cannot protect themselves, and when Homes, Hospitals, Asylums, Associations, Societies, and Committees of all kinds are at work endeavouring to improve the lot of the young workers, can hardly believe how terrible was the fate less than a century ago of those children who had lost their natural protectors-their parents-and were thrown on the charity of the world, And in order that you may realise your present advantages, and may determine as good citizens to hand on to postority even greater privileges than you now enjoy, we will, for a few minutes, turn over the pages of history, and learn how the child-workers fared in the early 19th century.

BEFORE 1832

We need not go back beyond the memory of people still living. Let us glanco vory rapidly at the period before 1832 when the working classes bad no votes, and the big towns no Members of Parliament. As this is only a little book, we will leave out altogether from our story any reference to the condition of adult workers, and

confine ourselves to the lot of the children.

When machinery began to take the place of hand labour in spinning, weaving, etc., men and women began to be drawn into the towns from the rural districts on account of the higher wages which could be earned in the factories, and, of course, they took their young children with them. The wages of adults were very small in those days, but they were better than could be got by farm labour. . It was soon found, however, that the duties of tending the machines, and of fetching and carrying materials, could be done by very young children. Child labour, was, moreover, very cheap. Employers throught it alound to pay 1r a day to a man for work which a child could do for 1d, and children were consequently drafted into the factories as soon as they could walk When the supply in the locality was insufficient, the deficiency was made up by bringing others from a distance The Poor Law Anthorfues of London sent waggon-loads of pauper children to Lancashige It was not uncommon for them to be put to work in the factories, workshops, and mines at six years of age, and threeme instances they began work at five. The hours of labour of children had by the first factory act in 1802, been limited to twelve but overtime constantly prolonged this period. 'The parent who would endeavour to realise the life of a factory child in 1912" said Sir Spercer Walpole in his 'History of England (Vol. III p. 201) 'should try to imagine his own little boy or girl-eight or nine years old-working in a factory. He should try to recollect that it would be his duty to rouse the chill on a coll. winter a morning at five in order that it might be at its work at eix, that dir after dar week after week, mouth after month, it would be forced to rise at the same hour, that with two short intervals of half an hour each, it would be kept to its dull, mountainous employment for thirteen hours every day, that during the whole of that time it would be breather; a dusty unwholesome atmosphere rarely able to relieve its himbs by sitting down. buch, upon evidence which it is impossible to dispute, was the life of every factory child before 1833. There were tens of thousands of such unfortunates in Figland alone "

And yet there were men, both m and out of Parliament, who were capable of defending this mensions system, although they had allown their pity for the sufferings of

178 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

dumb animals by passing in 1823 a law against the illtreatment of horses and cattle, and founding in 1824, the

National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. A child's existence in a well-managed factory was terrible enough, and it must be left to the imagination to picture"

its wretched life under a harsh master. (Lord Beaconsfield's novel "Sybil" offers a realistic description of the cruelties practised by a heartless employer at the time of which we are speaking.)

In the summer of 1831, Michael Thomas Sadier, member for Newark, pressed upon the attention of Parliament the lamentable condition of the children in

factories. In December of that year he introduced a bill to regulate the hours of labour of factory children. He proposed that no child under 9 years of age should be employed

for more than ten hours a day. Ten hours a day was the limit of labour of a felon in prison. Should little children work longer than a convict? Fierce opposition was

offered by many masters who objected to the Government interfering with industries, and a tedious enquiry ensued, and much evidence was laid before a Select Committee of the House. Medical authorities explained the terrible effects upon children of long hours of hard work in illventilated factories. Operatives came forward to tell the tale of their own sufferings when children, and to shew. their distorted limbs which had been the legacy of early and heavy labour. Lord Ashley (afterwards the 7th Berl of Shaftesbury) described visits paid by him to the hospitals in Lancashire where he found children crippled and mutilated by their work, presenting every variety of deformity "just like a crooked alphabet."

1833 CVD ONWARDS

In 1833-remember the date-slavery was abolished." throughout the British Funjare, and, chiefly through the untiring efforts of Lord Ashlev, a Lactory Act, was passed, which may be regarded as the first important step towards the reorganisation of industry by legislation, and particularly towards the protection of defenceless

It was no great reform, but it secured that in cotton and woollen mills children under 9 were not to be employed at all and under 13 were not to work over 18 hours a week, whilst young persons between 13 and 18 were not to be employed more than 69 hours per week This Act, however, did not affect asik or lace mills, or workshops, warehouses, mores and colluries where similar legislation was surely needed and where the work was not confined to 60 hours a week

In the coal puts, boys and gurls of tender years were still toiling in dirk, drimp unwholesome places, dragging or pushing the cars of coul through the narrow galleras Many of the seams were only 22 or 28 inches high so that nooe but the small children could pass through them Lattle drudges of seven worked for 12-18 hours a day, harnessed like bonats by a chain attached to the loaded trucks, often having to crawl forward on all fours.

"No horse on an overloaded coach" anys Sir Spencer Walpole in his "History of Figland," in donkey in a co termonger's barrow, few slaves on the properties of West Indian planters expensioned the maximum which was it old to many children—"harners"—in mines,"

"Such employment," says Dr. Fruill in his "Social England" (Vol. VI. p. 368) "from the age of 7 appears

to have been one regular way by which Guardians of the Poor provided for their pauper charges." Their ignorance was appalling. Not one boy in ten, not one grown person in fifty could read.

Again, through the untiring advocacy of Lord Ashley, an Act was passed in 1842, which entirely problitied the employment underground of girls and women, and of boys under the age of ten. The children's cause was now fairly starfed, thanks to the ceaseless efforts of Lord Ashley and his colleagues, and reforms began to quicken their pace.

In 1847, the Ten Hours Bill 1 became law, which restricted the work of young persons under 18 in textile factories to not more than 10 hours a day, or 58 in any one week between 5.30 a.m. and 5.30 p.m. It also prohibited their working on Saturday afternoons. This modest limitation of the hours of labour of young people of both sexes was received with joy by the factory workers. Between 1860 and 1864 the principles of the last named Act were extended to many other trudes by a series of Statutes. The Factory Acts of 1867, 1870, 1871, and 1874 each introduced some new feature.

1878

The famous Act of 1878, which consolidated 16 previous statutes, allows a prominent landmark in the history of labour legislation. Under this law children and women received still further protection. For instance, the employment of children was to be for half-time only (¿.e. in the mornings or afternoons, or on alternate days); the cleaning of machinery in motion by children was forbidden; whilst numerous provisions were made as to

ment times, bolidays, security against accidents inspection, saultary matters, etc. A "cluid also was defined to be anyone under 14, and a "young person" anyone between 14 and 18. Speaking generally the Act of 1878 remained unaltered until 1901, when by a new Act the provisions for safeguarding the workers against accidents were strengthened, and rules were laid down for maintaining comfortable temperatures in workrooms. This Act must be remembered for it also regulates the night work of youths, and prohibits absolutely the employment of children under 12 in factories, workshops, do ke, where or laundries.

The country had now awakened to the fact that the children of one generation are the adults of the next, and that one cannot expect to man a nation of strong men and women, sound in mind and leady, to whom the care of such an I mpire as ours can be safely entrusted, unless the children are properly fed, clothed taught, and protected until of an age to do these things for themselves

DEFECTIVE CHILDREN

The excessive number of defective epileptic, and mentally deficient children in our midst (largely the legacy of the exil secral conditions of a former day) presents a very difficult problem for the State, for it is plain that we cannot expect a healthy race to spring from these whose faculties are unequal to undertaking the rightful duties of citizenship. Metawhile, until legislation is carried further you may remember that by on Act passed in 1893 the Elementary Education (Blin I and Deaf) Children Act, the parent must cause a blind or deaf-child to receive suitable instruction and the Local Education

^{1 1} I A VII e 22

^{\$ 65} A 57 Vive c. 12.

Authority is bound to provide facilities for such education. By another Act in 1899, the duties in respect to epileptic and feeble-minded children are substantially the same as in the case of deaf or blind children; viz. If there is a certified "Special School" near at hand, it is compulsory upon the parents to send the child to that school. In the fluture we shall no doubt find that the LEA's will establish more Special Schools, and also make some prevision for the after-life of these unfortunates. Their case, as said above, affords one of the most difficult problems of modern civilisation.

RECENT LEGISLATION.

The Acts of Parliament which were passed in the lest 50 years of the late century for the botter protection of infant life and for the prevention of cruelty to children, have been very much extended by recent legislation. For example, in 1903 an Act was passed called the Employment of Children Act, shielding children from many hardships by regulating street trading (such as selling newspapers and matches), and by forbidding their carrying of heavy weights in factories.

of heavy weights in factories.

In 1904 the law was still further strengthened by the Prevention of Cruelty to Children Act, which restricts the employment of children in acrobatic and theatrical performances, and in street trading. In 1906 a most humano law was passed, the Education (Provision of Meals) Act, which allows a Local Education Authority to feed necessitous children who come to school hungry and unifed, and to recover the cost of guid meals, where possible, from the parents. Thus you see, little by little,

^{69 &}amp; 63 Vict. c. 32 4 Ed. VII. c. 15.

^{* 8} Ed. VII. c. 45

the State is tending to become the foster parent to such as are orphaned, or whose purents have failed or are unable to perform their proper and natural duties.

In 1907 we find yet another step taken to secure the health and bappiness of the boys and gurls attending the public elementary schools, for in that year there came into existence a Itw-the Education (Administrative Provisions) Act,2 which decreed that the children should be medically inspected, either before or soon after, their admiraton to the school, and before leaving to go out into the world. This is a most salutary provision. Vast numbers of children have been no permanently injured in health for want of a little medical attention when young Many eye, car, throat, teeth and skin troubles that would otherwise develop into serious defects or diseases can be remedied by early treatment. The future welfare of the nation will be profoundly affected by this important enactment. The provision of medical inspection has nlready led to the establishment of medical and dental clinics for school children, and of Open Air Schools and Chases Charitable societies have also come forward to supply those who could not otherwise afford them with surgical appliances, etc.

In 1907 a very useful clause was added to a law dealing with public health (Public Health Amendment Act), which gave powers to local authorities to set apart a portion of a public park for the sole use of the children, and to supply and fix apparatus for games and recreations. That, you will admit, is the part of a kind fester parent, and nothing is more delightful than to see the abundant happiness that such provision for their enjoy ment in the public parks confers upon the little stret-bred children of London. The London C unity and other Councils also

184 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

provide officers to watch over the children at play, and to protect them from molestation or danger.

A RETROSPECT AND A PROSPECT

Let us pause for a moment and contemplate these wonderful achievements. In 1802 we find the first factory Act, feebly attempting to remedy conditions of child-labour too dreadful for description. A century later, a code of factory legislation which is the admiration of all other countries! Why have we in this little book on citizenship thus re-opened the sad past, and traced the growth of the factory laws? Why did we in similar manner investigate the slow development of our educational system? Why shall we in the next chapter likewise review the steady evolution of higher ideals in the treatment of young offenders against the law? What is the citizen, young or old, to learn from all this? The answer is short. We learn from these things the gradual triumph of Right over Wrong. Progress may seem slow, and many hearts have been broken in its tardy advance. But it is sure. There is something divine in the breast of every human being that answers to the call of Right, and if Right is constantly and faithfully held up before their vision, mankind will follow it. Never lose hope, therefore, in any great cause that has for its object the righting of wrongs, or the amelioration of the lot of the downfalion and oppressed. Take heart of grace from what you have read about the victory of great and rightcous causes. In Education, for instance, we have seen the public conscience stirred until now it holds that the State-

> "While she exacts allegiance shall admit An obligation on her part to leach Them who are born to serve her and obey;

185

Is ading herself by statule to secure I or all the children whom her soil maintains The rationants of laters, so that noon

be forced To draige through weary life without the aid Of intellectual implements and tools, 4

The peet a prophetic vision as you now know has been fully realised We have seen too that the State by degrees has

realised that she must pretect and chamition the young and defenceless and make their wrongs her cause. In the next chapter we shall discover again that the State is slowly realising that harsh and cruel laws are no cure for crime, and that there are nobler ways of reforming the offender than by inflicting junishment Frerywhere and on all sides we are watching the slow triumph of Right over Wrong

Looking backward then who can say that our Eng land is not better than it was a century ago? Looking fernand, who shall say it will not be still better a contury hence? But only by patiently working for lofty and noble causes. We are enjoying to day the fraits of the labours of the futhful workers of an earlier day. Let it be your aim to carry the torch forward. There is no lack of great causes Seek one, and make it your own, and "whatsoever the hand findeth to do, do it with the mizht "

THE CHIMDIENS CHAPTER

An I now at length we arrive at the great Children's Charter, the Children Act of 1908, which gathers un into itself many little od is and ends of trevious

Worlaworth 'The Licensian " Book IA, (written about 1413)

^{* 8} Ed VII c 67

laws, and adds much that is new and important Under this comprehensive Act the child's progress from infancy to youth is safeguarded at practically every stage. So minute are its directions that it even prohibits the leaving of little children under seven in a room with an open fire, without a fireguard. It forbids entirely the sending or taking ont of children into the streets to beg or sing or solicit alms; it punishes the people who send or take them out to do these things; it prohibits children under 14 from engaging in any dangerous acrobatic performances, whether in public or private; it prohibits the giving of intoxicants to children under 5, and fines the publican who allows children to come into his-bar. It forbids the sale of gunpowder and cigarettes to children. and makes it an offence to invite young persons to bot. If they are cruelly treated this remarkable Act says that ohildren may take refuge in a police-station, or in a hospital or workhouse, and there be kept and kindly treated until the magistrates can make satisfactory arrangements for their future care. You will learn, too, in the next chapter that special Courts are established by this Act for children, at which juvenile offenders are. tried, quite apart from the adult criminals. The idea underlying this provision is to protect young people from all contact with the contaminating influence of hardened or habitual criminals. Thus, you see, from the few details that have been cited above, how wide is the operation of this splendid law, and how it endeavours to repair, the terrible conditions of the first portion of the last century, when the children of the poor were even less cared for than the dumh animals. The general aim of Parliament has been to assure to the rising generation the right to a healthy and happy childhood, by shielding them from . all forms of cruelty as well as from unwholesome and degrating influences. To secure this end parents and guardiens are made responsible and can be fined or imprisoned if they fail in their duty. Indeed the Children Act requires the attendance of the parent at the Court (if any of these regulations are broken), and he must show—if he would escape a fine—that he took proper care of his child.

From so recently as 1910 another protecting arm has been thrown by the State round the children of the poor, by a law which makes it an offence to self spirits to any young person under 16 or beer to any child under 14, except in corked and solded bottles. When you thus compare the lot of the child of to-day with that of the little ones of whom you have read in the early part of this chipter you will agree that the 20th century does, undeed, morit the title of the Children's Cantury.

CHILD WELFARE SOCIETIES

Not only has the State acting through Parliament, recognised its duty to the Child but numbers of voluntary societies and associations have also been established in response to the general sentiment, charging themselves with the welfare of the joung. One fine example of such voluntary agencies is that founded by the late Benjumi Wangh, and incorporated in 1895 by Royal Charter under the title of the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children. Sud it is to think that such an organisation should be necessary, but its records only too fully show how great a call there has been for its activation.

Of the numberless other voluntary agencies which aim

Licensing Consulidation Act 1021 VII & 1 Geo. 1 c. 24.

^{2 39} Leicester Square Loudon W

at helping children and young persons at critical periods in their lives one can only indicate a very few.

More definitely concerned with boys and girls at the moment they are thrust ont into the world to gain their livelihood are the

JUVENILE ADVISORY COMMITTEES

established under the Labour Exchanges Act 1 and the Education (Choice of Employment) Act.2 These most admirable voluntary organisations have been formed to give children information, advice, and assistance with respect to their choice of a career, and to prevent the more promising boys and girls from entering "blind-alley" occupations (such as errand boys, golf-caddies, etc.), which attract by reason of the immediate bigber wage, but which offer no permanent prospects. The value of this social work cannot be over-rated; for unless some such preventive measures be taken and systematically followed up, there is a very real danger lest the community may be burdened by an increasing number of persons leading futile or perverted lives, valueless to the State, and a menace to society. What we need are healthy, intelligent, self-reliant and self-supporting men and women-people of character-capable of fulfilling all the duties of citizenship, and playing their rightful part in the national life.

The State and the Municipalities which are the largest of all employers of labour, ought to be the last against whom the charge should be laid of creating blind-alley occupations. Unfortunately, many of the boy-employees are turned adrift from Government offices at about the age of 18-20. An attempt is now being made in some Government Departments to check this abuse. The Post Office in particular has announced that it will no longer

^{1 9} Ed. VII, c. 7.

^{2 10} Ed. VII. & 1 Geo. V. c. 87.

169

take on more boys than it can absorb into the permanent service

There is now a Javenilo Advisory Committee in practically every distinct in London. The indices of the office of the nearest local Committee can always be obtained from the Head Teacher of the Public Elementary School of the district in which you reside

Operating in the same duration are the Apprenticeship Associations, which have done and are still doing fine work by premoting a thorough in lestini training for boys and girls, by apprenticeship and offer methods including arrangements for attendance at Trade Schools and at Technical Classes—Such associations work through local committees which collect information and find suitable openings for boys and girls who apply to them for help. They see as fix as they can that fair terms are secured for the apprentice and that only satisfactory candidates aro introduced to the employers. The Javenile Advisory Committees co-operate extensively with these Apprenticeship Associations and in some cases have absorbed the latter into themselves.

OTHER VOLUNTARY AGENCIES

Of other voluntary agencies having for their object the increased welfare of the young we must not overlook the Children's Care Committees which of late years have been formed in most large towns in the country. The inestimable social and charitable work of these organisa time is almost entirely carried on by women, whose self-sternium real for the welfare of the youngest members of the community is one of the nation's most precious assets. These Committees deal with the health

and feeding of necessitous and neglected school children; with the provision of boots for the poorest scholars; with their recreation outside school hours, by forming "play. centres," and organising the play of the children living in the poorest and most crowded quarters of the towns, and with the innumerable incidents of child-life where wise counsel and timely help may save from disaster, particula larly at the time of transition from school-life to the life of adult employment. They also encourage children to join an evening continuation class as soon as they cease to attend the day school. The Invalid Children's Aid Association 1 is yet another of these voluntary agencies for social service among the London Poor. Its activities are directed towards assisting invalid and crippled children, by providing medical advice, nursing care, surgical appliances, wheelchairs, and other comforts. Through its kindly offices children are boarded out in the country and at the seaside, and when restored to health an ondeavour is made to place them in occupations suitable for persons physically handicapped. The Children's Aid Society," working in connection with the Reformatory and Refuge Union, is engaged in rescuing destitute and neglected children by placing them in industrial schools, or in homes under the care of respectable people. The Boys' Country Work Society a finds its sphere of operations in placing boys of good character on farms in the country, where they at once become self-supporting. To supervise the progress of boys and girls thus placed out by the aid. of such societies as above named, the services of a number of voluntary workers are enlisted to make periodical visits, and report to the society upon the welfare of its charges.

Denison House, Vanxhall Bridge Road, London, S.W.

² 117, Victoria Street, London, S.W. ³ 7, John St., Adelphi, London, W.O.

The foregoing are but a very few of the numerous organisations which concern themselves with child welfare, and practically all their work is performed voluntarily and without pay. It is one of the most hopeful anguines of the future of our nation that so many workers can be found whose sole reward is the convicionness that they are labouring in the cause of humanity. You will thus find, when you leave school, a boundless field of social service and plurty of scope for any devire you may feel to play the part of a good ettizen. Make it your duty to discover the names of all the voluntary and charitable organisations op rating in your neighbourhood, and whether there is among them any scope for such services as you can offer. Remember that workers are wanted quite as much and often even more than mone; Don't stand saide, therefore, because your purse is empty. There are happily plenty of rich people who are glad to provide funds for good purposes. It is the workers who are too often lacking.

Before closing this long chapter we must spend a few minutes in considering the present condition of what is known as

THE POOR LAW CHILD

A parent ought, of course, to lodge, clothe, feed, cleanse, protect and educate his child, and ho can be prosecuted if he fails to folfil these duties. But some parents are devend not only of means, but also of that natural affection which even the dninh animals show towards their of spring; and in the case of forsaken children, as also of destuted orphases, the State has to exercise the parental function. Such children come under the Poor Law, and unless some charitable organisation takes them up (like

by the late Mr. Muller at Bristol, which are both nonsectarian; or the Church of England Waifs and Strays Society) there is nothing else for the poor little ones but to come under the care of the Guardians. You have learnt how the Guardians of a past day drafted waggonloads of these desolate creatures away to the factories and mines. You will now hear with pleasure how different is the treatment of the workhouse child of to-day.

If you know Charles Dickons's novel, "Oliver Twist," you will recall the miserable conditions of the young inmates of the workhouses of his time. Let us compare that dismal picture with the methods of our own contury in dealing with children who, through no fault of their own, find themselves cast upon the charily of the State. Having undertaken the maintenance of a child the Guardians can discharge their dubes in various ways. They can maintain him in a workhouse—this way is rapidly going out of favour—or they can hoard him out, if an orphan. They can also send a girl to a training home for domestic service, or a boy to a training ship, or apprentice him (if over 12) to a trade, otc., or (with his

own consent) emigrate him to Canada. The children who are hoarded out may be sent to a "Cottage Home," such as that at Sideup in Kent, established by the Greenwich Union. There, dotted over a large park, are homes for these children of the State, each presided over by a "cottage father and mother." Trades are taught in admirably equipped workshops, whilst a gymnasium, a swimming bath, and other forms of recreation provide wholesome anusement for leisure hours. In no way are the boys and girls made to feel that they are inferior beings. On the contrary, opportunity is provided for a

start in life on a par with that of the average workingclass member of the community. In numerous cases the poor law children are 1 at 1 ato "Scattered Homes," each under the erro of a kin land capable fester metter All of thom attend the public clementary school of their neighbourhood just like other children, and the regrosch of pauperism is not illowed to darken their young lives. In overy way possible the child is ifforded the happiness of home life instead of the cold into my of an "institution" The former barrack like workhouse schools where hun dreds of these waifs were bearded and taught together, and stamped with the hatel name of 1 ouper are rap dly full ing into disus, under the more humans legislation of the present day I the 20th entury Poor Law Child the history of Oliver Twist must appear like a monatrous creation of the nactist's fancy lattle does such a child suspect how much he owes for his happier lot to the descriptive genius of Charles Dullens whose burning love for humanity was only equilled by his unrivalled power of touching the hearts of his readers with the sorrows of the pour

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESENTER

- 1 Find whether in your town or district there is an officer of (1) the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Unidiren (2) the National Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals.
- 2 Have you a Juvenilo Advisory Committee in your neighbourhood, or any security for assisting young people to find suitable employment?
- 3 Make a list of Charitalde and Philanthropic Societies in your district, and the object and aim of each
- in your district, and the object and aim of each

 4. Is there a Health Visitor in your town! If so what
 are his or like diffuse?

A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHII 5. Name some of the trades in your locality that are

scheduled as dangerous to health. 6. Are there any Cottage Homes, or Scattered Homes for poor law children near you; or a Workhouse School?

7. Discuss the question of what to do with the mentally

defective when they get beyond school age, 8. What was the "useful trade" to which Oliver Twist

was set in the workhouse? (See Chap. II. of the novel.)

CHAPTER XV

THE STAIL IND THE CHILD (Continued)

THE JEVENILE OFFENDER

THERE is an old Latin phrase—I t dis decenses Armet eaving how simple uses to take the d winward path. Luch of us well knows how easy it is to do wrong, for there is only one right way and so many wrong ones. Let us therefore in this chapter consider the treat

ment that the State meter to children who have taken some downward step that has brought them into the hands of the police. But before we examine the modern was of dealing with soung offenders, we will-as we did in the case of the child workers-turn lack the pages of history and see what a titule the State formerly adopted towards the cluldren who had follow within the clutches of the law A comparison of present day methods with those of the century just past will help us better to understand the practice of to-day, when the nation is striving to reclaim an I reform rather than to avenge itself upon ill-doers. We have at length recognised in our laws the fact that many young officialize have no chance of growing into good citizens. They may have been been and reared am let victous surroundings and to punish the for the sins of others is perther just nor wise trying to reclaim the beginner in crime and rests and to an honest and useful life, is a development of

196 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

recent legislation, as you will quickly see if we look back upon the early days of the 19th century.

THE BAD OLD TIMES

In the Library of the Inner Temple in London there are several shelves filled with the refords of the criminal trials at the Old Bailey—now called the Central Criminal Court. It is a heartending task to peruse these "Sgs-sions Papers" of long ago, for they exhibit what we have termed the frightful severity of the English Criminal Code of former days, towards young and old alike of both sexes.

We will dip into these rarely-opened volumes. Let us take down this one dated 1813. What a fearful record we find there of legalised butchery! Here straight: way in January of that year we find John Champiain, aged 17, sentenced to death for stealing 16 yards of carpet. It appears, however, that as his character had up to then been uniformly good, his sentence was commuted to one of "transportation for seven years!" What that meant we shall see by and by. Some men preferred death to the miseries of transportation. Turn over a few pages. Everywhere the reports seem to end with that dread word DEATH. And yet the offences. generally were trifling thefts or assaults, or matters which to-day would be dealt with summarily in a police court by the Magistrates, and for which a small fine or a birching, or committal to a reformatory or industrial school would be the utmost penalty. Indeed, most of the offences would be dealt with under the Probation of Offenders Act (see p. 202), and the young culprit would be discharged, and told that so long as his conduct was satisfactory he would not be called up for sentence.

197

But it was not so in the early 10th century. See how severely the boys and girls of that day were treated? For inclance, on 17th February, 1613, William Colling, aged 15, for stealing a pocket book and pencil, was transported for seven years! On the same day Fleanor Condon, aged 14, a young domestic servant, was sentenced to death for stealing some money of her masters from a drawer which was left open though, on account of her age she was recommended to mercy. In November of the same very Mary Ruby—only 15—stole six yards of ribbon! And for this petty theft she was ordered to be transported for seven years! We know nothing further of her melanchely fate but that her life was broken and runned at its outset by the cruel and insurante laws of her time is certain.

TI ANSPORTATION

And what was this "transportation" that was awarded so readily for every imaginable offence? It meant penal servitude in a distant unpeopled, somitropical colony, to which the unhappy prisoners were conveyed in connect alups or "hulks," florting prisons where, confined in dark cells and chained to the floor, they died like flies. The survivers, after a voyage lasting months—sometimes as surich as 9 months when the destination was Australia—nien, women and children were set to hard labour under the most bruthlising conditions. Sometimes they were lice need out—to all industs and purposes sold—to planters and others who wanted cherp labourers. Escape was punished by death. Such was the lot of those who were "fortunito" enough to escape the gallows.

It would be easy to fill this book with many worse cases than the foregoing which have just been taken at

random from the pages of the above-named volume of Sessions Papers.

SLOW IMPROVEMENT

Put the book away, and come nearer to our own days. Surely in 1837, the year in which Queen Victoria came to the throne, the law must have become less brutal than in 1813! Not yet-but improvement was near at hand. Open the volume for 1837. Here is the very first case tried at the Old Bailey in that year, George Doyle, aged 15, indicted for breaking into a dwelling house at night. He stole nothing: nevertheless, this lad of 16 was condemned to death after a trial lasting a very few minutes, and he was duly hanged! The next case is that of a young man aged 19 indicted of stealing a purse containing £1 8s. 6d. Again the sentence was death, and it was, of course, carried out. Turn over a few score pages. What is this? Michael Roach, aged 13, transported for seven years for stealing a pair of boots worth 4s. 6d.! Pass ou quickly. Turn over hundreds of pages—August, 1837, Queen Victoria is now on the throne. Still the same cruel story. Robert Reynolds, aged 14, transported for seven years for stealing a pocket handkerchief, value 3s. !

Put the volume away. Enough has been quoted from these ghastly records to show you how the State treated youthful offenders in the days of your grandfathers. You must picture for yourself the measures dealt out to adult criminals. Death was the penalty for some 220 offences. Girls in their teems shared equally with the other sex in the awful punishments inflicted by the law. And yet crime flourished! We have had slowly to learn that crime is largely the product of ignorance and injustice,

and that in proportion as the second conditions of the peer are improved, and their education cared for, so do the gallows and gools become unnecessary.

In 1831 there were 1001 people sentenced to death in our country, though they were not all hanged. In 1835 there were only 5.23. What happened between these years? If you look back at the last chapter you will see that remedial legislation of a factory withers dates from 1833. The full in the criminal figures is not a mere concidence. Each improvement in the lot of the libouring classes and each step in the direction of greater humanity in the treatment of the criminal has been aften hed by a diagnation of the ancount of crime.

About 18.8 a more mercital spirit began to prevail the 1888 were altered and people were no longer condemned to death for trivial offences. The public conscience gray more sensitive. In 1866 i transportation was abolished in 1866 public executions were probabilisted, and in 1872 the stocks were used for the last time. Capital punishment is now practically matricial to the crune of murker, although there are one or two other offences still known to the law (e.g. high treason) for which the death penalty may be awarded.

You should acquaint yourself with the work of the great reformers of the 19th century, such as Sir Sinniel Lomilly, Sir James Mickintosh, and others through who a humanitarian labours the old barbaric criminal code was such away. You should tend too of John Howard, and of Phrabeth Fry and her friends the Gurneys and Buxtons and of their campaign against the narrow, underground foul dens which served for prisons, in which hundreds of hapless folk—track and untired, younganded—were haddled together in chains, and how, through their persutent efforts those tile helbeds of

erime, vice, and disease were abolished for ever. The story is too long to tell here, but you will find it in Dr. Traills "Social England," in Sir Spencer Walpele's "History of England," and in numerous other works dealing with various phases of the social transformations of the Victorian Era. Tew of the above-named workers for the good of humanity lived to see any appreciable result of their labours. But they sowed the seed which afterwards ripened into the legislative enactments that the 20th century now enjoys.

THE NEW ERA

At the outset let us state that by the Children Act of 1908 (see p. 185), capital punishment and penal servitude can no longer be awarded to young people under 16, nor any form of imprisonment to those under 14. How that would delight the heart of Sir Samuel Romilly could he icturn to earth again! "But what," he might ask, "have you substituted for the old-time punishments?" The answer would be something like this-"We have established a national systom of schools where our children have a moral and physical training such as they never before enjoyed in the bistory of our country; we have endeavoured by labour legislation to make their life brighter and more comfortable, se that there is less inducement to rebel against the law; we are studying how to stop crime at its source; we are beginning to regard the parents or guardians as being more at fault than the child in a large number of cases that come before the Courts, and we are making it more difficult for them to shirk their parental responsibilities; we have set up Children's Courts, whose object is not so much to punish the juvenile offender as to bring him back by watchful care to the path of rectitude, we have passed Acts which allow the Judge to send a first offender away without panishment, on his promise to amend his conduct, we have established Industrial Schools for boys and girls who are likely to become young criminals if they are not promptly removed from the surroundings to which they are living. we have substituted the school for the good in our Reformatories, we have established Berstal Institutions' for young men and women between 16 and 21, who would otherwise be sent to penal servited but who we believe are still capable of being reclaimed in addition to all these things provided by the law we have founded a vast number of voluntary species-some of which are named in the last chapter-for helping young persons into the right course at the most critical moment in their lives By such calchtened means as these we are trying to prevent the flow of recruits into the criminal classes, and to restore to a decent life those who have not gone too for along the downward rath

Let us examine in a little faller detail some of these various agencies for checking the growth of erims in its cirly stages, and first of all inspect the work of the

CHILDREN & COURTS

The Children Act provides that children shall not be permitted either before trial or afterwards to be as-ociated with old or hardened criminals. The young folks must not even be brought into the Court until the whiteast have level disposed of, and no speciators or any other people except the parents and those immediately concerned, are allowed to be present at their trial. The Act provides also for a separate Court House to be used if necessary, but at present it is usual for the ordinary

Court of Petty Sessions to be turned into a Children's Court as soon as the older prisoners have been dealt with and removed. In its methods of procedure the general principle is to place the children under kindly supervision, and among good influences, so that they may learn the value of upright conduct in bringing about their own happiness as well as that of the community in which they live. This good purpose is assisted by the Summary Jurisdiction Act of 1879,1 which gives the alternative of paying a fine instead of going to prison; and by the laws for first offenders,2 which save all those whose first lapse is not of the most desperate nature from acquaintance with prison life; also by a later and praiseworthy piece of remedial legislation effected in 1907,3 whereby special Probation Officers-generally women-are appointed to look after young people who have been found guilty of an offence which in former days would have landed them in prison, but who have been permitted conditional release upon "entering into recognisances" to be of good behaviour. The Children's Probation Officers advise and assist the parents in the management and supervision of the young delinquents, and report to the Court as to their behaviour. By means such as these, it is attempted to save boy and girl offenders from the lasting disgrace of having been sent to prison.

Imprisonment is rarely helpful in the reformation of character. Instead of being "moral hospitals," prisons are too often "criminal manufactories." To send a youth under 20 to gaol for some trilling offence is still common in this country, though public upinion is gradually setting against this practice. Imprisonment should be the last

^{1 42 &}amp; 43 Viol. c. 49.

^{2 50 &}amp; 51 Vict. c. 25; 1 Ed. VII. c. 20.

² Probation of Offenders Act, 7 Ed. VII. c. 17.

resort of the State and not the first. But as the law stands at present, a person over 14 is regarded as an adult in very many respects, and punished as such. Thus if charged with some petty offines (eg the breach of a byo law) he is ordered to pay a fine or in the alternative to go to prison for a term of days or weeks. Very usually the young fellow is unable to pay the money, and therefere, must go to gool This is nothing less than disastrous, and lays the law open to the charge of manufacturing cruminals. Hal the youth been liberated on bail and permitted to clear off the fine ty instalments he would probably never have troubled the courts again. But having once been dubbed a criminal and gool bird,' he finds himself looked upon askance by society and all too easily falls into had company, and ultimately sinks into the rinks of the habitual offenders.

INDUSTRIAL SCHOOLS AND REPORMATORIES

The germ of the modern Industrial School is to be sought for in the Ragged Schools (see p. 147) intended to said destitute children from sugminey and crime. The critical industrial schools were, as a matter of fact charactello institutions for the purpose of training and educating poor orphan children who had not necessarily infunced the criminal law. The present Industrial Schools—which there are about 100 in Fingland and Wales—date from 1869, and provide a much needed haven of refogs for children removed by order of the magistrates from had homes or day raved surroundings whilst at the same time they affind an excellent industrial training and with it a prospect of leading in honest useful life in after years.

First offenders-where the offence is not very grive-

^{1 27 &}amp; 50 Vat e 118

204 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

are frequently committed to the Industrial Schools, but the worst of the juvenile delinquents, such as would (if they had been older) have been sentenced to penal servitude, are sent to Reformatory Schools, which are and always have been, since they came under the law in 1854, penal as well as educational establishments. Now that Local Authorities have nower to establish

Now that Local Anthorities have power to establish and aid reformatories as well as industrial schools there is some danger of losing sight of the distinction between the two. Committal to an industrial school is intended to benefit rather than punish, whereas detention in a reformatory (of which there are between 40 and 50 in England and Wales) forms a definite part of our system of correction for young criminals under 16. Iu both Industrial Schools and Reformatories. however, the training is such as to equip the children for useful occupations. On leaving, the boys often join the army, whilst the girls take very largely to domestic service. Some of the industrial schools for boys are training-ships, and here, of course, the instruction is intended to train the lads to become sailers. There is a movement at present to emigrate many of both sexes to Canada, where, in a new land, removed entirely from the old associations, and under the kindly care of various philanthropic organisa tions, the young people may make a fresh start with every prospect of a successful career. It is satisfactory to learn that by far the greater proportion of the children leaving the Industrial Schools and Reformatories pursue an honest life of work. Less than a lifth of their numbers relapse into evil courses.

1 17 & 18 Vict. c. 86.

Porstal Institutions

Though the Lin breakers of whom we are now about to speak are not exactly 'juvenile offenders | yet if ey touch so closely upon this class that they have been given by the police the name of paventle adults. You will numerals r that the Industrial Schools and Reformatories are intended only for persons under the age of 16 and although the law regards a person of 11 as old enough to have reached years of discretion and to be therefore punishable in the same way as these of more mature years there has arisen of late a feeling that it is worth while making a strong endeasour tore from the jusquideadult criminal that is the person between the age of 16 and 21 In 1895 a Committee on Prisons reported that "under the present system numbers of young prisoners came out of prison in a condition as bad or worse than that in which they came in To amend this state of things on a laurable voluntary association began (with the co operation of the prison authorities) in 1902, to collect at horstal Prison man I ochester those suscendeadults who, it was believed, would prove amenable to remedial measures. Instead of the ordinary good discipline, the convicts were put to work in the fields, where they were taught market-gardening, flower culture buil ling, etc. Indoors they had lessons and levest carpentry, plumbing black-math's and trasmith's work, cookery, bakery, shoemaking, etc. They were spared also the ignominy of convict dress and of association with the older criminals. They were, whilst well behaved, permitted the aso of library books allowed visits from friends, and other privileges. Remark ble success attruded the experiment, and the methods advocated by this noble society have now received the sunction of the

law. In 1908 the Legislature passed the Prevention of Crime Act, which gives the Court, power to pass a sentence of detention in a Borstal Institution, of from 1. to 3 years. When the time for discharge approaches, the Borstal Association takes the youth in hand and tries to secure work for him, and give to the young fellow a chance by putting his feet in the right way to earn an honest livelihood. No greater service of citizenship can be suggested than preventive work of this character.

DECREASE OF CRIME

And what now—it may be asked—has been the result of this war against crime? Has compulsory education helped at all in this direction? Has the greater lepiency of the law been attended with a diminution in the number of criminals? Have the self-denying, zealous, and parsistent efforts of the numerous voluntary societies charging themselves with the care of young people been rewarded with any measure of success? Is our England of to-day better for these labours of love?

The answer to each of these questions must be an emphatic "Yes." Not only has the percentage diminished, but the total volume of crime is less than it was at the passing of the Elementary Education Act of 1870, when though the population of the Kingdom has increased in the meantime by over 40 %. In 1870 when, as you have learnt, the national system of education was inaugurated, there were in England and Wales over 100 prisons, all full; there are now nhout 60 half-empty! You may verhaps be aware, if yon live in London, that a vast prison occupied—not so very many years ago—the site of he Tate Gallery on the Embankment, whilst yet another

huge prison—the famous Clerkenwell Gad—las given place in recent years to blocks of offices and workmens dwillings. Upon the day that these lines were i need the author's eye was caught by the following lines in the Thirts of that date—'In his address to the Grant Jury at it expening of the Sessions the Charman suid it was a matter of great gratification to all interested in the welfare and the prosperity of the County (of London that during the last three or four years the number of indictable officies had decreased by nearly 20 per cent

A century has passed since Six varied. Romilly stirst warning was uttered in Parliament against the making of criminals by the action of a too harsh law. His was indeed a voice or ing in the wilderness. His appeals fell on deaf cars and he died saddened and discouraged by years of unavailing effort. But his labour was not in vain, as we now recomise.

Let every social worker therefore who is inclined to fret at the apparent inefficiency of his self improved toil, draw fresh courage from Bonnilly a life and mission Sconer or later, here or hereafter as the propiet said of old, "he shall see of the travail of his soul and shall be satisfied."

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

1 What ought the attitude of an employer to be towards a boy or girl of 10 who, having been in (a) an Indistrial School, (b) a Reformatory, (c) Prison for a trivial offeace, applies to him for employment?

2 Are there any Industrial Schools in your district where children attend during the day time only! If so, what class of offenders are send to such schools, and how far is the system found satisfactory!

- 3. In the United States they have established a "George Junior Republic," to which young offenders are sent. Upon
 - what principles is it conducted? Have we snything like it in this country? If so, where? 4. If capital nunishment were to be abelished here as it is
- place?
- in Switzerland and Italy, what would you substitute in its . 5. How would you deal with (1) the habitual tramp; · (2) the incorrigible idler? 6. Some offenders are no sooner released from prison than

they resume criminal practices. In this connection discuss the proposition, "Train the young and retain the old

criminal."

CHAPTER XVI

MASTERS AND MEN

TEUR UNIONS

To give you in a short chipter any adequate picture of the 'labour movement is quite indessible. The most we can do is to pive the way for your own inquiries when you come face to face in later years with the most difficult problem of our civic life, viz the relationship of I implovers to I imployed or as is often said, of Capital to Labour. Some main principles however, you can easily grasp.

In the first place you will readily understand that a poor turn's capital consists of his strungth and skill, and unless he cut find some work upon which he can exercise his strength and skill in ritum for wags a he must starre. In his anxiety to obtain work he is afruid to happle with an employer over the matter of wages, for four his may lose the job altogether. Consequently, so long as workmen art singly, they are at a disadvantage in barguining about wages and hours of work.

At a very early stage in our industrial history, working men saw that their only chance of rusing their wages and of shortning the bours of labour was to come line together and act in unison. The mere instinct of self-preservation impelled them to some furn of "collective bargaining." But this soon trought them into collision

with the law, for severe restrictions had been placed by Parliament upon combinations among labourers for such purposes as raising the rate of their pay. From the reign of Edward I. to George IV. some 30-40 Acts of Parliament were passed, designed to prevent what we nowadays term the "organisation of labour." Combinations of workmen were not merely forhidden; they were held to be criminal. They were regarded as contrary to public policy, as being in restraint of trade, and the participators in such combinations were treated as malefactors and prosecuted for conspiracy! Trade Unions were, indeed, established secretly, but they were always liable to be broken up by the rude hand of the law. In 1800 a very drastic measure 1 was directed against such organisations. and when introduced was commented upon in the Times newspaper of 7th January, 1800, in these words: "One of the first Acts of Imperial Parliament will be for the prevention of conspiracies among journeymen tradesmen to raise their wages. All benefit clubs and societies are to be immediately prohibited."

Under this Act, all persons were forbidden to combine with others to advance their weages or decrease the quantity of their work, on pain of being brought before a Justice of the Peace (one J.P. was enough), and sentenced to three months' imprisonment. And you have read in the last chapter what the prisons were like in those days! Such treatment filled the working classes with discontent, which manifested itself in riots and acts of violence, as well as in strikes which failed misorably for lack of funds. Though imprisonment and transportation were vigorously applied, the working men never ceased to protest against the conditions imposed upon them by the State and by their employers, until at length, in 1824, a

law was passed, allowing workers to combine under the same conditions as other people. Although trade unions were now permitted to exist, they were hedged about with innimerable retirections. The Legislature was still haunted with the idea of conspiracy, and only out of fear of not and rebellion went so far as to sanction the meeting of workinen to discuss questions affecting their wages, etc. They might enter into any agreement with their employer for fixing wages and hours, but if they began to make regulations about piecewich or the number of apprentices, then at once again because conspirators.

You will see from the following incident how danger

ous it was for workpeople to exceed the very limited privileges afforded to them by the law In 1834 st occurred to some people that an organisation similar to a Trade Union might be extended with advantage to agricultural labourers whose wages were intiably small—
7s to 8s a week Desset-shire was a purely agricultural county, and there a union was formed which in no way broke the combination laws. It came to the ears of the nuthorities, however, that the men had bound themselves numenties, however, that the men had bound themselves together with an eath to be faithful to each other. That was enough. There existed an old law making it an offince to administer illegal eaths. The statute had been rarely enforced, practically it had been disregarded by every trade union in the Kingdom. But just at this moment public opinion was revised against the unions. So the rusty old statute was resultated to purish the men who had formed the first agricultural union. Six purchall allowers a fall is more than themselves. writched labourers, wholly ignorant of the lim, were tried at Dorchester for administering illegal caths, and were sentenced to be transported for 7 years. A storm of indignation swept over the country Some 20,000 to

30,000 workers assembled in London on 21st April, 1834, and marched on Whitehall. There was no bloodshed, but the Government felt compelled to release the men. Communication was slow in those days, and it took two years before the convicts—now exalted almost into the position of national heroes—were granted a free pardon and allowed to return home.

The position of trade unions in the eve of the law continued very unsatisfactory for another generation. Though not actually prohibited by statute their position was not legally acknowledged. Their members were often prosecuted for, and convicted of, conspiracy. Still they grow and multiplied, although Act after Act was passed to regulate their proceedings. Not until 1875. when two famous laws were placed on the statute book! did trade unionists feel themselves safe from the charge of conspiracy. By one of these Acts, which has been dubbed the "charter of trade unions," the proceedings in trade disputes were henceforth to be of a civil and not of a criminal nature. Trade nuions were no longer to be deemed illegal associations, nor might workmen be prosecuted for combining to strike nuless the means they used were unlawful. Unions were allowed to hold property, and could sue to recover that property if it was stolen or kept unlawfully from thom. Thus after centuries of struggle, the right of combination for the protection or advancement of their interests, and a legal recognition of their trade unions, were secured to workmen. But this is not all.

In 1906 a measure called the Trade Disputes Act,
put Trade Unions in an exceptionally privileged position.
For no "tortious" act done illegally during a trade dispute

can a Union now be made responsible. Only the several individuals who do the illegal acts can be unded hable. Though the Union may advise an I encourage its members to I reak the I will cannot be reached by the law. That is a position which many profile deem unduly privileged

THE AIM OF THE UNIONS

A very great many trad unions some of them excordingly rich and powerful have now been formed in this country. The broad objects of these unions may be trich summarised as follows -to mercase the wages of their members to shorten hours d un to S hours a day for every trule (this has been effected in the case of underground workers), to secure a minimum living wage to exercisely to limit overtime to restrict the number of apprentices to regulate and even in some trades to abolish precework to demarente the classes of work to be performed by each trade, and to ferce trade-unionism upon all workpeople by refusing to work alongside of non-timonists. To achieve these ends they have united their forces and succeeded in sending a considerable number of their representatives into Parl ament. You may or may not approve of all these objects. It is not our place here however, to cruicise the aims or actions of the trade unions, but simily to learn what sort of bodies they are, and what they are street, to attain. This much is certain, however, that "collective bargaining" is now too firmly estal lished ever to be displaced

The above named objects for which the Unions are norling involve a considerable expenditure of money. We find, therefore, that trade unions make a 'levy" upon all their members—of perlaps 6d or even is a

week-whilst during disputes, when large sums are being paid out, the levy may be considerably higher. The contributions of the unions are not, however, solely used for militant purposes. Though the main object of the funds is undoubtedly to support members when engaged in disputes, some of the unions also provide "unemployed benefit" for members who are temporarily, out of work. Most of the more firmly established unions further add to these functions those of a "friendly society"; that is, they provide sick, accident, superconnuction, and funeral henofits. But as the "fighting funds" of a trade union are not kept apart from those intended for provident benefits, a prolonged strike, or depression of trade may make it impossible for the union to meet its engagement as regards sickness or superannuation. We shall find, however, that by recent legislation employers are now compelled to compensate workmen for accidents occurring in the course of their employment, and that the State has taken on to its. shoulders the duty of providing old age pensious; also that by the National Insurance Act which came into force on 15th July, 1912, the State, in conjunction with the employer and the workman himself, has seeured sick." pay, medical attendance, and other benefits for the worker during illuess, whilst in some trades it also supports him during a period of unemployment. Furthermore, as Members of Parliament have since 1911 been paid a salary of £400 a year, the unions no longer have to bear the cost of maintaining their parliamentary representatives.

Thus the Trade Unions, having been largely relieved of many of their former burdens, are able to accumulate

larger funds for fighting purposes

"INDUSTRIAL WALFIRE"

And now, if you have carefully read the preceding portion of this chapter, you will have realised that between masters and men there are plentiful opportunities for a conflict of interests. If the differences between employers and employed cannot be settled by friendly negotiation, either the men go out on strike, or the masters refuse to employ them any longer and lock them out. A strike or a "lock out" is the last resort of either party, and until one or the other time of the struggle and gives way, business con es to a standatill wages cease, and the whole community begins to suffer formerly strikes were local in character (possibly between one single employer and his men) and in that case they affected only a small ares, but of late years the "collective strike" and the "sympathetic strike" have come into existence these cases a whole trade or a series of trades takes up the quartel of a single person, and in this manner we have seen the vist cotton industry juralised because one employer declined to submit to the requirements of a troils union

Combinations of working have led to counter combinations of employers, and the "collecture lock out is the weapon with which the latter propose to retaliste against the collective strike. Up to the present the general "lock-out" has not been applied in this country to my large extent, but in Germin, where the employers have federated themselves much more closely than in the United Kingdom, the general lock-out is used rigorously whenever the masters consider that the men have struck universally. The collective strike, and the collective lock-out are—as you will readily believe—disaytrons to the whole nation, and it may be safely, said that one of the most pressing problems of modern citizenship is to discover some less; runtous means of adjusting the relations between Capital and Labour. Capital requires Labour, and Labour's dependent on Capital. Each is essential to the other. Strikes and lock-outs are westeful destructive, and leave behind them much rancour and bad, blood. Moreover, they inflict untold hardship upon other people—especially upon women and children quite outside the scope of the dispute. Every means of reconciliation between the parties should therefore be tried before resorting to these violent and disruptive methods.

CONCILIATION AND ARBITRATION

We will briefly examine what machinery the State provides for bringing the disputing parties together. In 1896 a Conciliation Act1 was passed, chipoworing the Board of Trade to take steps to promote a settlement in cases where a difference exists between employers and employed. They may appoint a Conciliator or a Board of Arbitration who shall endcayour to bring the disputing parties to a settlement. If both the disputants desire arbitration the Board of Trade will appoint an impartial and independent arbitrator. The Act has not been as effective as might be wished. Disputes are usually settled between powerful Boards of employers and employed, who conclude agreements setting forth the conditions under which masters and men purpose to work together for the future. But as these agreements have no binding force at law they are often broken. It has been suggested by many people that arbitration should be made compulsory in this country. In the interest of the whole nation it is unject that strikes should be made unliveful and prohibited, and that the questions in dispute should be referred to an independent tribinal, by whose should be referred to an independent tribinal, by whose should be referred to be bound. But British trade unionists have so far declined to give up the right to strike," and there is nothing in our laws as jet to prevent these industrial struggles being fought out to the latter end

WAGE BURENS

In some few trades—particularly in these tavolving home labour—the wages are so writhedly low that the Government has been compelled to step in, and secure to the workers a more equitable scale of remuneration. These trades are spoken of as the "sweated" industries, and comprise such occupations as paper-look inching, hand sewing for the tailoring trades, lace finishing, and critain binds of chinu making, in all of which the work is conducted by women in their own homes. Trade unions have not flourished among women workers, but this is only one of the many reasons why the wages in these trades have remained so scanty.

To amend a discreditable state of affurs the Legislature in 1909 passed the Trade Boards Act, establishing and empowering Trade Boards to fix fair rates of wages in certain trades. If the Act is found to work successfully no may expect its provisions to be extended to other occupations, possibly next to that of the agricultural labourer. This measure affords an excellent example of the trand of much of our recent legislation.

1 9 Ed MI, c. 22.

EMPLOYERS' LIABILITY

Many occupations are attended with danger to the workers, and accidents are bound to occur from time to time. If such accidents could be proved to be due to the negligence of the employer, the injured workman was always able under the Common Law to recover compensation. But sometimes the accidents arose from circumstances quite outside the employers' control (as when a man slips and falls from a scaffold), or from the clumsiness or carelessness of some fellow workman; and in these cases the injured person could not recover any compensation for the damage he had sustained. Little by little public opinion has come round to the view that when a workman is injured in the course of his employment under any circumstances, he ought to receive some measure of compensation from his employer-in other words the employer must be made liable for injuries happening to his employees when engaged upon his work. A Statute placing this obligation upon the employer was passed in 1880,1 but as this Act required the workman to prove that the injury was occasioned by the fault or negligence of the employer or of his responsible assistants, it did not cover eases of "pure accident" or accidental injury from fellow labourers. In 1906 these deficiencies were remedied by the famous Workmen's Compensation Act 2 which may be regarded as the final development of the principle known as "Employers' Liability." By this Act an employer incurs responsibility for all accidents, as well as certain specified diseases happening to workmen engaged in the performance of his work. The compensation in case of disablement amounts practically to a weekly payment equal to half the average weekly wage carned by the workman during the preceding twelve months. As you will at once realise, these payments may become a heavy charge upon employers, but by the beneficent principle of mutual insurance—of which you will soon make acquaintance when you enter business life—they are enabled to be ut the very considerable burdens imposed upon them by the two Acts above named

NATIONAL HEALTH INSULANCE

The worker may also be aneapacitated from pursuing his duily labour by other waves than accident. He may fall Ill, or contract some serious disease like consumption Until recently the law made no provision against each misfortunes, and as soon as his small savings were exhausted, the working man (or weman) had no alternative except to go into the workhouse, or rely upon the charity of others for support By a notable Act of Parlamentthe National Insurance Act of 1911 -- provision is now made agreest sickness and invalidity for all persons under the income tax limit of £160 per year, by com pulsory assurance, towards which il e State, the employer, and the workman all contribute. From the wages of men, 44 per week is deducted, and 3d per week from the wages of womco To these contributions the emplayer adds 3d, per week for each employee, whilst the State adds the equivalent of 21 per person weekly. During sickness an allowance of 10s per week is paid to men, and "a 6d per week in women for the first halfyear, and 5s to each for the remaining period of dealifement. Free medical attendance is also provided. In case of total disablement a pension of 5s, a week is paid for life.

For the reception of consumptives special "fresh-air hospitals" called Sanataria are being built as required, where beard; lodging, and medical treatment are provided free of cost. It is hoped by these means to holp to stamp but this devastating disease which carries off tens of thousands of the population annually. Other benefits which cannot be enumerated here are also provided by the Act. This great piece of social legislation also makes a beginning of insurance against unemployment—the chief terror of the worker. Unemployment benefit is afforded, as yet, to only a few trades but it is probable that it will be ultimately extended to others.

Taken in conjunction with the Old Age Pensions Act(which provides that any person of British nationality over
70 years of age can claim a pension of 5s, a week it has
or her income is less than 10s, a week), you will receiv
inse that the State is doing much to remove, from the
life of the wage-carners those crushing anyieties which
accompany illness, nnempleyment, and lack of resources
in old age. The cest to the country is enormous—many
millions of pounds per annum—but it is believed and
hoped that the increased buppiness of the people, and the
increased efficiency of the workers, will more than compensate for the additional burden placed by these laws
upon the taxpayer.

When you remember also the extraordinary development of the Factory Acts (which have brought about as great an improvement in the lot of the adults workers as in that of the outlikers) and the protection afforded by the Employers' Liability and Workmen's Compensation Acts. you will at least agree that during the last half century, the State cannot be charged with neglect of the interests of the labouring classes

FURTHER PROPERTY

Much still remains to be done and the citizens of the future will have planty of problems upon which to exercise that best powers of thought and states manching it is very will and proper to insure the worker against unemployment. But have a fact as possible property memory loyers at the root of the matter at 1 as far as possible property memory ployment. But Labour Frebanges which were established in 1909 under the Labour Frebanges Act, and which ends arour to bring worker and work together, are a step in the right direction, but they do not solve the problem of incomployment, the causes of which his deep and ludden in the structure of modern industrial life.

Nor is it possible to remain satisfied with conditions which permit so much potenty to exict side by side with excessive wealth. Nobody wishes to assist this incorrigible idlers or the "work-dip". They deserve their poverty. Ultimately they will have to be removed from somety and put away into "Hour colonies" where they will be obliged to work or starve. But, that a min should tollong and hard at work which the community requires to be done, and yet be norble to keep himself and his family above the efficiency line, is indefentible. Some impetious people in their firste to mend social conditions, advocate a catastrophic unferior of the whole fabric of society, and would sauction acts of violence to attain their

case of total disablement a pension of 5s. a week is paid for life.

For the reception of consumptives special "fresh-air hospitals" called Scenatoria are being built as required, where board, lodging, and medical treatment are provided free of cost. It is hoped by these means to help to stamp out this devastating disease which carries off tens of thousands of the population annually. Other benefits which cannot be enumerated here are also provided by the Act. This great pioce of social legislation also makes a beginning of insurance against unemployment—the chief terror of the worker. Unemployment benefit is afforded, as yet, to only a few trades, but it is probable that it will be ultimately extended to othors.

Taken in conjunction with the Old Ago Pensions Act¹ (which provides that any person of British nationality over 70 years of age can claim a pension of 5s. a week if his or her income is less than 10s. a week), you will recognise that the State is doing much to remove from the life of the wage-carners those crushing anxieties which accompany illness, unemployment, and lack of resources in old age. The cost to the country is enormous—many millions of pounds per annum—but it is believed and hoped that the increased happinese of the people, and the increased efficiency of the workers, will more than compensate for the additional burden placed by these laws upon the laxyayer.

When you remember also the extraordinary development of the Factory Acts (which have brought about as great an improvement in the lot of the adult workers as in that of the children) and the protection afforded by the Employers' Liability and Workmen's Compensation Acts, you will at least agree that during the last half-century, the State cannot be charged with neglect of the interests of the labouring classes

PLITHER PROFIEMS

Much still remains to be done and the citizens of the future will have plents of problems upon which to exercise their best pewers of thought and state-unrading it is very well and project to insure the worker against anomaly logithent. But would be der better to strike at the root of the matter and as far as possible prevent unemployment. The Labour I rehanges which were estimated in 1909 under the Labour I rehanges which were estimated in 1909 under the Labour I rehanges Act, and which endeavour to trung worker and work together, are a step in the right direction, but they do not solve the problem of unemployment, the causes of which lied deep and hidden in the structure of modern industrial life.

Nor is it possible to remain strished with conditions which permit so much poverty to exist aide by side with excession wealth. Notody withest of assist the incorright endlers or the "work-by". They discrete their powerly Ultimately they will have to be removed from society and put away into "labour colonies" where they will be chigad to work or tarre. But, that a mus should toil long and hard at work which the community requires to be done, and yet be unable to keep himself and his family above the efficiency line is indefinable. Some impetuous people, in their laste to mend seemal conditions, advecate a citastrophic unhand of the whole fabric of society, and would stretten acts of notice to attain their

292 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

end. And this brings us to a brief consideration of the doctrines of

SOCIALISM. COLLECTIVE OWNERSHIP

There is no term so much abused and so vaguely used as the word "Socialism." It is applied indiscriminately to every form of political belief; to that of the wild fination who would reconstruct the State by the aid of dynamite to that of the communists, or collectivists, who would start the world afresh by dividing up property equally among all; to the modest aspirations of those who would like to see the Municipalities undertake the provision o pure milk; and to the unselfish creed of the slum-worker who helieves that by dovoted personal effort alono car society be saved. Socialism varies in various countries In France it is largely identified with the revolutionary and anarchical programme of "Syndicalism," whereas in Germany the Socialists-though far outnumbering any other political party-are so divided amongst themselves that it is difficult to know exactly what they want Socialism in Germany appears, in fact, to comprise a number of highly theoretical and frequently incompatible doctrines. "Challenged," says Mr. W. Harbutt Dawson in his informing work "The Evolution of Modern Germany," "to affirm a positive State policy, it takes refuge in phrases, or flatly denies the obligation to contemplate the practical realisation of its theories." In another passage this well-known writer remarks that "of all futile spectacles offered by German political life, none is so strange or tragic as that of a huge party, numbering now 31 million adults, engaged year after year, and decade after decade, in the vain task of beating the air."

Socialism in Eugland is neither so revolutionary in its

aims as in France, nor quite so theoretic as in Germany. The love of lay and order ingrained in the Englishman a nature and his practical character assert themselves even money those who openly arow themselves to be a lyanced socialists. Of course we have in linguist also a section who nalyocate force as a remedy for social ille but their number is small and their leaders inconspicuous for intelligence or allisty. The vast majority of English socialists desire to sittain their ends by constitutional means.

And what is it that socialists everywhere want to arrive at ? As far as one can discern any common ends, tles all want to abelish gravate property in land mines railways, canals factories shops et in fact they object to private ownership of any of the many forms of produc-tion distribution and exchange of wealth. They would nationalise all these things that is the, would make the State the universal landlord owner and employer No one should work more than eight hours a day and to every worker should be guaranteed a minimum ware. The amassing of fortunes would be rendered impossible and everybody would be pensioned off comfortally if disabled or upon attaining a moderate old age. These are approximately the ideals of the thorough going socialists and they assure us that if the State were the universal omi lover and landlord we should no longer be troubled with labour disputes and strikes but that everyone would be easer to work for the common good

You must judge for yourself whether the socialist aim is within practical reach or, if attained whether general contentment would be the result and whether it sufficiently takes into account the ordinary metives of human action. Whit guarantee hate we for instance that strikes for higher wages would not occur in a cocalist

community? The socialists declara that we have already gone a long way in their direction, and point to the ownership and successful management by the State of the Post Office, and ask why this principle should not be extended into other spheres; why, for instance, the State should not buy up and manage the railways and mines? They point also to municipal trading and show that many Town Councils own the gas and waterworks, and the tramway systems within their administrative areas, and that the profits go for the benefit of the community in some form or another. Why, ask the socialists, should the Councils stop at trams, gas and water? Why not have municipal farms for the supply of pure milk, and municipal stores for the sale of unadulterated goods at the lowest possible prices, and municipal collieries to supply coal without any midddleman's profit? On the other hand, "individualists" altogether object to the Councils going into business and taking up work which might be done in the way of business by private persons or companies for their own profit. They urge, with some . degree of truth, that publicly-owned business concerns are seldom economically managed.

These, and such as these, are questions which you will find hotly debated nowadays between men of divergent political views. In this little book we can only place, the subject before you. You must use your resoning powers and dismiss your preconceived prejudices when you come to examine these most difficult problems of.

20th-century citizenship.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEARCH

 Contrast the ancient Trade Guilds with the modern Trade Unions, and see wherein they differ in their objects.

- Name 3 great sirikes of recent years, giving the cause of each and the results attained
- 3 In connection with trade unions what is meant by (a) peaceful picketing, (b) strike brisking, (c) a blacking, (d) making ring, (e) recognition of a trade union)
 - 4 The "track system" is now abolished. What was this system!
- 5 Discuss the effect of unre-tricted international comp tition. Can you suggest any practical means of restricting such competition?

6 Should strikes be made unlawful, and arbitration compulsory?

7 Affirestation reclamation of fore-allows, small holdings, emigration are all recommended as a means of reducing the amount of unemployment. Discuss each of these proposals

8 Imagine a Socialist State where no industry was conducted for private profit. How would you provide in such a community any incentive to commercial progress, and how would you reward a man who made some commercially valuable discovery in fearly wireless telephony?

9 Can you explain why many socialists object to copartners and profit charing schemes between Masters and

Mon 1

10 Co-operative Stores (as distributive agencies) among working men have proved very successful, but co-operative lactories (productive agencies) rarely so Can you assign any mason for this lack of surcess in co-operative production f

11 Discuss the value of Rehet Works in times of unemployment

mucint 103 men

CHAPTER XVII

ENGLAND AND THE EMPIRE

THE WHITE MAN'S BURDEN

You have, no doubt, learnt in your geography lessons many interesting facts about the widely-scattered territories known collectively as the British Empire. You have probably scanned the map of the world and observed those parts of it coloured red, and have been told thatthese portions belong to Great Britain, and that they comprise altogether about one-sixth of the land surface of the globe. You have read, too, in your lustories of the founding of our Colonial Empire by bold adventurers like the Cabots, Humphrey Gilbert, Drake, Raleigh, Hawkins, Cook, and others; how they sailed away from these shores and planted the British Flag in distant parts of the world, and how, without any definite or premeditated plan, they added bit by bit to the nation's possessions." You have doubtless delighted in tales of fights for the flag, in recitals of deeds that won the empire, and of many a brave and noble act done for its sake on land and sea, in war and peace; and your heart has been stirred by these glorious records of our rough island's story, and you have felt proud of your birthright-of being born of British blood. It is good to feel the glow of patriotic pride, and to rejoice in the fact that you spring from a race owning such high traditions.

But patriolism is more than waving the flag and singing songs on Empire Day Self-glorification is ignolise Great Empires have existed in the drys of long ago have decrycl and have despiperred. Let us therefore examine for a few moments some of the problems affecting the constitution and well being of the British Empire and lask ourselves whether it too is destined to decline and fall like those of the profess whether it is found; if upon a more solid and enduring basis.

Do not forget that six sevenths of the four hundred million people who one illegiance to the British Crown are alien to us in blood lan uage and colour and that we hold the I impire for them as much and even more than for ourselves. We must guard against the view that the coloured races are born and exist only to be ruled over by whites. That used to be the general hybrid Ideas of universal brotherhood and the doctrine that the black man has a clima to equal rights with the white man are of quite modern growth. The abolition of slavery throughout the British Impire took place within the memory of many people still hving, whilst the emancing tion of the slaves in America has within the lifetime of the author of this book. Public of muon has undergone a complete change. We now hold that it is stitude of the white man towards the less experienced and less educated races should be that of friend, adviser and teacher, rather than that of lord and master.

That Vight is hight is no longer the accepted rule. Duty has become our watchword. Livery right has its corresponding duty and error we claim $r_{\rm o}$ his over so large a portion of the earth's surface we mean dutient correspondingly great. This is what is meant by "the white mans a burden. Since we have had laid upon our shoulders the task of governing so many races in so many

lands, we must see to it that that task is worthily fulfilled; that those who look to ne for guidance shall be educated and trained so that in due time they may learn the art of self-government; that the laws under which they live shall be humane, and shall favour no man abovehis neighbour; that taxee shall not be oppressive, and shall weigh least heavily upon the humble classes; that justice shall be administered fairly between rich and poor, and hetween black and white; and that freedom of person, of speech, and of thought shall be the right of all so long as they keep within the wide bounds of the law. We have tried to put these principles of government in. force in every portion of the Empire-wherever, in fact, the Union Jack is flown-and in this respect the British Empire differs from all the Empires of antiquity. The Roman Empire adopted another attitude towards the nations whom it subdued. The conquered princes were taken captives to Rome to grace the Victor's triumph, The eubjugated peoples were not trained to govern themselves; they were overawed by the military, and often reduced to slavery and exploited for the enrichment of their masters. Both Greeks and Romans were highly civilised peoples, yet they saw nothing wrong in this' procedure. Not until the 19th century-as we have already learnt-did our own Empire rid itself of the odious charge of countenancing slavery. You who have been reared in a free country, and who look upon such elementary rights as above described as your natural birthright, can hardly realise how slowly they were won for you by your forefathers, and how much they mean to people still groaning under despotic and arbitrary rule.

The lesson, therefore, that the history of the bygone ages teaches us is, that our vast Empire is not merely a priceless heritage, but a trust for which we are one and

all responsible, and that unless we discharge this trust well and faithfully at too must decline and fall like those that have gone before it

Each of you when you attain to manhood can influence the destiny of the Empire through your vote. It is the part, therefore of a good cutizen to project his vision beyond the affairs of the parish or town in which he lives and to take a broad view of the vast teld in which our fullow countrymen and fellow subjects are working. Fur in whitever just of the Empare wo dwell whether we are Finglishinen, Scotemen, Irishmen, Canadians, Australians, New Jealanders, South Africans, or natives of India, whether white or coloured we are all British subjects, and the welfare of each affects the welfare of all. Discontent, injustice, oppression wir finnine, disease and distress, cannot exist in one part without their effects being felt elsewhere. In the same way if any portion of the Empire is enjoying prosperity the beneficent influence of that prosperity is felt far and wide for latter or worse we are united together as members of one body. If you think still deeper you will discover that this solidarity of mankind exists among nations just as much as between the various portions of the Impire When this is universally recognized a new era will dawn It will then be seen that devastating war is the worst possible way of actiling international disputes

THE DOMESIONS EXPOND THE SEAS

Some parts of our I-mpire have grown up into manhood, and are too big and powerful to be called any longer by their early name of "colony". From sparsely populated softlements they have developed into great nations, and are now autonomous—that is to say, they govern themselves. They have their own Parliaments, their own courts and judges, their own educational systems, and they are now setting up schemes for their own defence in order to relieve the Motherland of the duty of protecting them from possible invasion. Indeed, as you have doubtless read in the newspapers, some of the Dominions are already contributing to the cost of the Imperial Navy to which we entrust the task of guarding the ocean-paths between the various parts of the Empire.

The Dominion of Canada, the Commonwealth of Australia, the Dominion of New Zealand, and the Union of South Africa are the most important of the Dominions beyond the Seas. From your histories and geographics you will learn the story of their discovery, colonisation, position, area, climate and products; but there are certain other matters which perhaps you will not find in your books, and to these we will address ourselves for a few moments.

CANADA

Have you ever considered the effect of Climate upon the development of a country, and upon the character of its inhabitants? If not, you will soon see that the future of the great Dominions is bound to be greatly influenced by their climatic conditions. In Canada, for instance, the winter is long and severe, with the result that negroes do not care to settle there. Canada is thus free from the "black problem" which besets the future of the United States. There is no great difficulty in preserving Canada as a "white man's country." Notither do the South European races emigrate largely to Canada. They, too, do not enjoy its rigorous winter. Canada is thus relieved by Nature of two very undesirable elements

which seriously affect the social development of her southern neighbour

Again, the Canadian winter, bright and enjoyable as it is, does not favour the growth of west and understalised children. We may, therefore expect in the control of a few generations to find Canada inhibited by a strong tricle race of white men who will exercise a profound influence upon the destiny not only of the Pripare but of the whole world. We must rejoice that a country so fall of promise is also do ply attached to the Motherlan Lay ties of blood affection and common institutions.

AUSTRALIA

Now let us turn to the southern hemisphere In Australia the climate ranges from that of the torrid to that of the temperate zone and thus the preservation of the Commonwealth as a white man's country presents difficulties hardly known in Canada Until recently if e augar plantations of Queensland were largely worked by black labour-Kanakas from Polynesia. But the feeling runs strongly in Australia against the presence of black people A " white Australia " is their cry, with the result that laws were passed a few years ago against the employment of black labour and the Kanakas were deported and repatriated Since the 31st December, 1906 thick men have been practically probabited from entering Australia. To compensate the sugar growers for the loss of their libourers a heavy bounty was given by the State Government upon all augus produced to white lacour The work of cultiviting the came under a tropical sun appears, however, to be untit for white men, and the production of sugar seems to have diminished since the departure of the blacks Australia consists, as you probably know, of six self-governing States—New South Wales, Victoria, Queensland, South Australia and Northern Territory, Western Australia and Tasmania—which have bound themselves into a Federal Commonwealth under the Crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland. The Activation Report of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland. The Activation by the Commonwealth under the Crown of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland. The Activation of the State of Commonwealth United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.

Long before the Federation, however, the several States of Australia had regarded it as desirable to impose certain restrictions upon the influx of Asiatics, particularly Chinese, who were attracted in great numbers to the gold fields where their characteristic industry reaped a rich reward. Increasing anxiety to preservo Australia for the white man has led the Commonwealth Government to legislate against the further introduction of Asiatics, and it is now very difficult for a yellow man to obtain admission to Australia. Thus, you see, that the strong arm of the law bas been invoked by Australians to do for their country what the climate so largely does for Canada, Australia, however, welcomes Europeans, and invites them to fill the big empty spaces of the Continent. She particularly desires to find inhabitants for the great Northern Territory currounding the Gulf of Carpentaria, which, as you will see from the map, lies within the tropics. Much of this region is very fertile and fit for colonisation, but whether white men can live there permanently is a question which time alone can determine. At all events, Australia is resolute in withholding it from settlement by the black or yellow races; though, doubtless, by the introduction of Kanakas and Asiatics its vast natural resources would be more quickly developed.

New Zealand

The Dominion of New Jealand seems to stand happily outside the troubles arising from racial differences. Her soluted position remote from the immediate proximity of black or yellow racea, her elimate which resembles that of l'ughand and her pastoral industries which appear to affed little opertunits for the employment of coloured labour have doubtless saved New Zuslan I from some of the problems which have perplexed Australia. A large measure of prosperity attends the industrial activity of the Dominion which rembers it an attractive home for the numerous emigrants from these shores, who are prepared to make the k ig 10 yage to this most distant of our coloural possessions.

SOUTH AFFICA

It is as yet too soon to speak confidently of the future of the four South African colories—The Cape, Natal, The Transvarl, and the Orunge Free State—which by an Act of Parliament, in 1909 bound thunselves together into the Union of South Africa. Less than ten years after the here war between liver and linton, which rent South Africa as under, and cost the lives of tens of thousands of brive men, the housile states were federated into a Union which—it is hoped—will establish a settled form of Government acceptable to both races. The Seat of Government is at Pretoria, and the Parliament sits at Cate Town

The difficulties before the new Union are many and great, eg the language problem—whether Dutch or linglish shall be the official language, and which shall

predominate in the schools frequented by Boer children; the question whether the black population shall have political and other rights equal to those enjoyed by the whites, etc. There are many other problems, too complex to deal with here, which will require supreme tact and skill in their handling by South African statesmen. We shall all, therefore, watch the progress of the young Federation with anxious hope. It is a good angury that the Union chose as its first Premier Mr. Louis Botha, who had fought valiantly in the Boer war of 1899-1902 against the British troops. When the strife closed Botha won the respect and admiration of his former adversaries by his strenuous endeavours to make the peace effective and permanent, by joining all the colonies-Boer and British -under one united government.

The Cape is of immonse strategic value, as in time of war it might very well happen that our only route to India lay round the south of Africa. A charge of dynamite might block the Suez Canal, and were South Africa in hostile hands our path to India might be completely barred. The completion of the Panama Canal, which is to be opened to warships of all nations, would

afford an alternative, but much longer route.

INDLE

The gradual steps by which British rule has been extended over India until now it practically covers the whole of the great poninsula, is one of the most fascinating stories in world history; a story with which, as good citizens, you should acquaint yourselves. You would no regard a workman very highly who was ignorant or clumsy in the use of the tools of his trade; and it is equally true that a man cannot be regarded as an efficient citizen if he is ignorant of the history of the Empire ander which he lives, and in which he is required to exercise the rights of citizenship. Make it your duty, therefore, as you go through life to "studie history and geography between the books you read for mere recreation. You will be amply rewarded. There are true stories in the history of Lodin of Canada, of Australia, of South Africa, and indeed of all portions of our Empire, which are just as it rilling as any romance you have ever read. Moreover, you will find a great pleasure in being better able to understand the difficult imperial questions with which the Government of the day is constantly confronted. In the control of the destines of India and of the Colonial Empire we should be neither Liberals nor Conservatives, but should guide our steps by the hight of history, and by what we Ishone, after careful thought, to be right, just, and true. Our territarial interests in India date from the fourse.

dition in 1600 of the East India Company, which was formed to carry on trading operations in the East. From the foothold first secured of Surat, by this famous Company, our influence has steadily aprend until when in 1911 the King Emperor George and the Queen I mpress. Mary held their grand court or Durbar at Delta, and receited the homage of many nature princes, British rule extended over a country of more than oou and a helf unilioo square unles, containing a population of meritan 200,000,000 inhabitants, made up of a hist of distinct nations and tribes speaking over 140 diffarent languages. It is because of the differences of race, languages. It is because of the differences of race, language, religion, and caste, that it becomes possible for a rece handful of white men to govern the vast dependency. There is only one white soldier in India to 12 000 natures.

The merease of our power in India during the Iss.

236 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

300 years has not been the result of mere greed of territory. It is always difficult for any European nation to occupy even a small portion of the country of a less civilised community without extending its sphere of influence. Thus, for instance, attacks are made upon the trading settlements by warlike tribes which must be repulsed; trade routes are subject to interruption by bands of robbers and must be guarded and kept open; friendly tribes are harried by some enemy, and look to the European settlers for assistance against the common foo; frontier disputes arise which can only be ended by the appropriation of new territory; traders and missionaries pash forward into dangerous and unsettled regions, and are perhaps massacred, whereupon the murderers must, if possible, be caught and punished, and failing that, the whole district must be taught a severe lesson. These are the usual incidents which every great trading nation experiences when extending its commerce into uncivilised lands. English and French traders have always been noted for the persistence with which they bave forced themselves into wild and inhospitable regions; and we have over and over again in the story of our colonial development been obliged to assume the responsibility of governing some outlying territory, not only for the protection of the traders, but also for the defence of friendly natives against their hereditary enemies. As an illustration of this process read the story of James Brooke, Rajah of Sarawak in Borneo. In similar manner we were led not very long. ago to annex Upper Burmah; whilst the repeated extension of the N.W. frontier of India is another example of annexation necessitated by the presence in that region of many wild and aggressive mountain tribes.

BLITISH RULF JUSTIFIED

The King of Great British and Incland is Emperor of India, but as a constitutional Sovereign be can only act in that capacity through a Minister-the Secretary of State for India, who is always a member of the Cabinet The Secretary for India is assisted by a Council of fiftien members, all of whom must have some knowledge of and experience in Indian affairs. The Indian Budget (ep. p 21) is brought into the English House of Commons every year and submitted for its approval, but the Indian Resenue is never used for the enrichment of the hachsh nation, nor does the King as Lipperor of India receive any addition to his mount from that country The money rused from the people of India is expended in India upon the cost of its own Covernment, Army, Civil Service, Public Education Railways, Irrigition Schemes, etc. Grants for Lincation are made out of the Indian revenue on much the same principle as in Fagland. You may remember that at the Delhi Durlar the King-Fuperor proclaimed that these grants would be forthwith increased by the sum of £333,000 It must not be forgotten also that vast sums are voluntarily sent out by the various churches in this country to establish end support mission echools, medical and other missionaries. and denominational institutions of various lands in all parts of In ha Britons are justly proud of their Indian I more It has been the theatre of many acts of herousin and of the display of many of the best virtues of the British character In India we have been able to show how we may rule over mees quite incapable of selfgovernment, with justice, wi-dom, and magnaments our controlling hand were removed, the country would at

238 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

once be torn from end to end by internecine war. The various sects are very hostile towards each other, "Under British supremacy peace is maintained, and public works -railways, irrigation schemes, etc. - are carried out for the benefit of all. Suggestione that we should retire from India and allow the country to rule itself betray a complete ignorance of history, as well as of the conditions which exist in the great peninsula. Representative government, of which you have read in Chapter IV., is not familiar to the Oriental mind; nor do Eastern nations seem able to appreciate it. They prefer a benevolent autocracy (see p. 2). Do not, therefore, be led away by ignorant statements that India suffers, because we do not at once establish representative institutions there. and leave the country to manage its own affairs. That may come eventually, but the time is not yet. The masses in India would not know what to do with a vote even if they had one. Ninety per cent, of the population can neither read nor write, in spite of all the schools that have been established. Meanwhile, educated Indians are freely appointed to high office under the Government, topositions of command in the Indian Army, to seats on the Judicial Bench, etc. Even so far back as 1833 it was made law by an Act for the better government of India,1: that " no native shall by reason only of his religion, place of birth, descent, colour, be disabled from holding any place, office, or employment." We have every reason to he proud of the British "raj" or rule in India. Mistakes, of course, have been made. But England has given, and is still giving, numbers of her best men, and her best thought and endeavour, to promote the welfare and happiness of India's teeming millions. The highest tributes have been repeatedly paid to our rule in that

country by the greatest French, German and American authorities. Let us, therefore, take encouragement from these words of commendation, and percevere in our work in India, confident that we shall add still further to the lastre of thus brightest jewel of the British Crown

LGYPT

The Butish occupation of Egypt—the land of the Phariolis—belongs to very modern history

It is too long a story to tell here in detail, and you must consult such a work as Lord Cromer's "Modern Lypt' if you wish to know how it came about that on July 11th, 1982, the British gunboats bombarded Alexandria and subsequently entered the country to quell the inght-ful disorder into which is had fallen. You will learn in those volumes how it became impossible for our troops to quit the country to long as the warlike dervishes were able to come down from the Sondan and harry the defence less fellaheen or peasants of Egypt. No more dramatic story exists than that of the attempt made by General Gordoo to deal single handed with the Mahdi the prophetleader of the dervishes, who was tooked upon by them as of divine origin. You all have beard of Gerdon's fate -bow he was shut up in Khartoum, and how the Frpedi tion organised for his relief arrived just too late to rescue him. He had been murdered by the fanatics on January 26th, 1885, two days before the Relief Lapelition, after encountering infinite difficulties, came in sight of the beleaguered town. It became necessary thereafter to reconquer the Sondan, and to do this an faryption Army was trained by Lord Kitchenor, who gained a decisivo victory over some 50 000 dervishes at Oudurman near Khartoum on September 2nd, 1893

The progress of Egypt since the re-conquest of the Soudan has been remarkable. The whole country has been settled. A railway has been carried to Khartoum, and a college for the education of the natives has been erected near the spot where Gordon fell.

The British occupation of Egypt has done for the Egyptians what they had proved quite incapable of doing for themselves. Taxes bave been reduced and equalised, and the peasants are no longer subject to unjust and crushing imposts; industries have been established, and both sugar and cotton are now grown with great success; the fellaheen are becoming prosperous to a degree never known before; a balance to the good in the country's accounts now takes the place of the deficit which regularly occurred under the old rule; huge dams have been thrown across the Nile to preserve the waters fer irrigating the land in that rainless country; canals have been cut to carry the water to the fields, with the result that the creps are now secure against any possible failure of the annual overflow of the Nile. The Law Courts and the Criminal Law have been reformed, and the prisons in which captives once lived for mouths like wild beasts have been wholly reorganised; the purchase of slaves has been made a criminal offence; good hospitals, asylums, and schools (for girls as well as boys) have been established; the water supply to the towns improved; railway and postal facilities extended, and many other benefits, too numerous to mention, secured for the country.

The future of Egypt still remains a problem of the Empire. Lord Cromer, who as Consul-General in Egypt, more than any other man was responsible for the introduction of good government into that land, believes that Egypt must eventually either become autonomous (i.e. solf-governing) or must be incorporated into the British

Empire! He himself hopes that in time the Legitians may bear the art of religorermment and manage their affairs for the benefit of the whole country. Unfortunately, however, the Explain too aften places his own personal interests before his duty. He is apt to look upon office as a means of providing him with a good salary and an easy life, rather than with opperanties of deroted and disinteracted work for his fillows. The Explain personals are among the most industrieus people in the world, but the upper classes are among the most lithragic and affine includent. The question of handing over the present excellent management of Egyptian abserts to nather talers is not, therefore, as simple as might at first be imagined.

Crown Colonies, etc.

It would sayour too much of a goography leason were we to traverse the Funtro and deal even in the briefest manner with each portion. If you have grasped something of the nature of the difficult problems that present themselves in India and in the great Dominion's beyond the Sens, you will be prepared for the smaller yet still important questions which are constantly arising in connection with one or other of the nomerous territories compressed in the British Empire.

The West ladies and other Crown Colonies (recolonies not yet endowed with responsible government, but ruled by a Governor appointed by the Crown) furnish their own set of problems, whilst the earl Protectorates like Richmandand Nyassaland, Ugenda, etc., over which we exercise an undefined authority, all make calls upon the attention of the Secretary of State for the Colonies. You can rarely take up the newspapers without reading of some matter with which the Colonial Office has to deal. At one time it may be the investigations into the sleeping sickness in Uganda; at another the measures for alleviating the distress canced by an carthquake or tidal wave in the West Indies; or it may be some difficult question of colonial finance. Thus you see that the oversight of the Crown Colonies and other portions of the Empiro which have not received full powers of selfgovernment, throws a heavy burden upon the Colonial Office, and upon the Ministor responsible to Parliament for its work. The management of so great an Empire is indeed a Titan's task, and of course there are occasions upon which the interests of its various parts come into conflict. For the purpose of discussing colonial matters, and in particular the all-important subject of the Defence of the Empiro, there has developed in recont years an excellent practice of inviting the leading statesmen of the great Dominions beyond the Seas to meet His Majestv's Ministers in order to confer upon questions which affect the Empire as a whole.

IMPERIAL CONFERENCES

The first of the Colonial Conferences, as they were then called, met in 1887, the year of Queen Victoria's Jubilee. It discussed imperial telegraphs and post, as suggestions were made as to hinding the various parts of the Empire more closely together by means of tariffs. We will speak of these in a moment.

In 1894 the second of these Conferences was held. It met at Ottawa. In 1897 and 1902 still other Conferences were held. In 1907 the meeting assumed the title of the "Imperial" Conference, and held an interesting discussion upon Imperial Defence which has led to

important results. The same subject was further decolope in the Conference of 1911 which was probably the
root important of all these meetings. It is now-safe to say
that the great Dominions have accepted the principle that
they must take their share in the dence of the I mpure.
No common line of act in has as set been a lopted. Yen
will however waith with the locusest interest there
will however waith with the locusest interest there
manifestations of the unity and soli larity of the Empire.
Such preparations have no magnetic rapited flow of trade
and commerce between the various parts of the Empire
and thereby to custure the peace and prespecting of the
witch world.

Int you cannot expect the Overser's Dominions to rest content with more outral attions of mone, or rhips or men. They very properly claim some some in the control of Imperial affairs. You may be sure that future Conferences—which are now held every four years—the question will be rus at of the possibility of developing the Imperial Conference into a Parliament of the Impire. It would lead us too far to discuss this very indirecting and momentous properly and in these proper The audjust bristles with difficulties some of which you usy, perhaps think out for yourself.

COMMITTEE OF IMPREIAL DEFENCE

Meanwhile you may remember that in 1909 a Committee of Imperial Defined was formed for the paryone of inaugumting a system of co-operation in incitary and mainly defence between the a veral states of the Empire 1ts constitution as factible and at prostate comprises may of His Majesta's Manusters together with the Heads of the Army and Navy. Its functions are purely advisory by

244 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

its task is one of increasing importance. It is generally anticipated that this Committee may be the body upon which the Overseas Dominions will be represented and that it may solve the problem of the participation of the distant portions of the Empire in organising the means of Imperial Defence.

IMPERIAL PREFERENCE

Many politicians have advocated a system of imperial. tariffs as a means of knitting the Empire in still closer bonds. Brisfly they propose to introduce in this Country a system of import duties, but to allow goods from our Colonies to enter free of tax, or with a smaller tax than would have to be psid by foreigners. Whilst thus the tariff-reformers proposs to give a "preference" to imports from the Colonies, the self-ruling Colonies are to be asked to give us similar preferential treatment. This in theory weuld mean that we should admit Canadian and Australian wheat and meat fres of duty, but impose a small tax upon food coming from Russia, the Argentins, or anywhere ontside the Empire. This question of taxing food from foreign sources has aroused much contention. It is believed by many that the tax would make food dearer, and would thus lessen the purchasing power of the wages of the labouring classes. The whole subject is too complicated and too controversial to be discussed here. Free Trade, Protection, and Imperial Preference are political questions to which you must hereafter devote your best powers of thought. The most solid and enduring tiebetween ourselves and the Dominious undoubtedly restsupon community of sentiment and of ideals. Whether any scheme of preferential tariffs would strengthen these, ties is a matter for careful consideration. Already both

Canada and Australia, out of friendship and with a laudable desire to benefit the Motherland have given to the manufactures of this country a certain measure of piefirence—that is they impose upon them a lover scale of dates than upon the products of (say) Germany and America But they do not admit, and have no intention of admitting lintish goods free. They are determined to "protect their own industries. It is to be remembered also that both these great Dominions have expressed their reluctance to enter into any scheme of tariffs which would lay upon the norking classes of this country a beatier load of taxation than they already bear. With these principles before you it will be your duty when you assume the responsibilities of cittrenship, to decide for yourself how far a scheme of tartiffs can be devised to protect the trade interests of the Empire, as well as to promote the well being of all its component parts. You must not shut your eyes to the fact that the greater proportion of British exports to to countries outside the Empire, and that these nations might be tempted to retaliate if we placed barriers in the way of their trade with us.

EMPERTION AND IMMIGRATION

One other point we must notice before closing this chapter. You have heard, no doubt, about the large numbers of people who leave this country each year to actile in the colonies or in foreign lands. The Colonial Office has a most useful Emigration Department and all, Broadway, S.W., intending emigrants can obtain information about the places where they may wish to go, and the cost and best way of getting there.

It is saddening, however, to thruk that a population, equal to that of a large town, emigrates annually from

Great Britain and Ireland to seek hetter conditions of life in other lands. It is true that about four-fifths of these men and women find a new home in one or other of the British Possossions. And, no doubt, were we not essentially a colonising people we should nover have heard of the British Empire. But it has now become a question of whether we can stand so great a drain of the best blood, bone, and sinew of the nation without suffering from its loss. The colonies desire only the youngest, strongest and healthiest, and refuse admittance to immigrants of weakly or diseased constitution. The aged, the feeble-bodied and feeble-minded are not wanted This opens up a matter of the deepest concern. Many of our best citizens are being taken, and the worst are left behind on our hands. Whole districts in Scotland are being depleted of a sturdy peasantry whom it should be our endeavour to keep on the land. It can hardly be deemed wise that deer forests should be allowed to rise where men once tilled the soil; or that the interests of sport should supplant those of husbandry. Great Britain is not over-populated; indeed, Mr. Seebohm Rowntree -a great authority-states 1 "that there is room on Britain's land for 3,000,000 more workers than it at present supports." If this he so you can at once recognise the importance of developing our home agricultural industries, and preventing the emigration of so many excellent and hardworking citizens. Moreover, our food supply would be vastly increased were the soil more intensively cultivated. This subject of emigration-its advantages and dis-

This subject of emigration—its advantages and disadvantages—is one towards which you may profitably direct your thoughts. Like all questions it has two sides, and you must strive to discover which side offers

London Evening News, 25th October, 1912.

the greatest benefit to the Motherland. Canada and Australia are glad to take as many healthr and industring men and women as we can send tham. But can we spare them? That is a quasan which roost he asked and answered. If we decide that we ought to keep as many capable people in the country as possible then we must legislate so as to spen up the land for closer settle ment—a course of action which will are use strong feeling and much sharp controversy. If it the bulk of the land in this country is held by a comparatively small number of courts.

Whilst hundreds of thousands of our fellow-countrymen are annually quitting their fatherland there is on the other hand, a considerable influx of foreign immigrants who, under stress of poverty or the unjust trust ment which they experience in their native lands toake their way here to cappy the freedom of person speech, and action which is denied to them in the countries from which they come I or centuries I ngland has offered a home to the oppressed of all nations. Under our flag they have found freedom of creed, worship and political belief, and we have well omed them cordially and given them the protection of our laws and the privilege of British citizenship. We have even felt proud that Great britain was regarded by all nations as an asylum for offeeders whose only crune was that they had protested too loudly against the harsh or unjust laws of their own country

But of lite years another class of immigrant has invaded our chares, people who are thoroughly unsatis fectory—who live perhaps been expelled from their own (and perhaps also from other countries) as undesirable citizens, or who have committed some crime and have contrived to escape to this country in order to hidd themselves in London. Sooner or later they resume their criminal practices here, with the result that a very large number of offences dealt with in the London Police Courts have been committed by aliens of a vicious and degraded type.

In addition to these immigrants of criminal tendencies there is an inflow of many thousands per annum of people -chiefly of Polish or Russian origin and many of them Jews-whose habits and standard of living are repugnant to British ideas. They are practically without education, and without any of those attributes which might recommend them as a desirable addition to the ranks of British oitizenship. They have never known what freedom means, and patriotism is a mere name on their lips. If any other country offered them a more agrocable asylum, they would leave England as readily as they entered it. Separated by language, race, religion, thought and oustoms, from their neighbours, they draw together into almost distinct communities; especially in the East of London, and in some of the largor provincial towns, where whole districts have assumed the aspect of a foreign city.

These aliens stand outside our civic life, and show little tendency to intermarry and become absorbed into the British race. Indeed, such fusion is not very desirable, as the resulting strain is less capable than the Anglo-Saxon of hearing the weight of Empire. Servile hy descent and instinct, unskilled in any of the industrial arts, useless in time of war, a burden upon the ratepayers in times of peace, they add nothing to the social, economic political, naval, or military strength of the country of their adoption, and therefore present a difficult problem for British statesmanship.

Unaccustomed to free and representative institutions,

after five years in this country they may and often do become "naturalised" (i.e they obtain the full rights of citizenship) before they have learnt either our language or the nature or value of the suffrage. Often, too, they disguise their foreign nationality by adoption when naturalised, some honourable Saxon family name.

The newly-freed man unives the worst of masters and the "sweated trades" are largely carried on by the "alien immigrants. You have learnt (p. 217) that it existence of these low pand trides has already called for special legislation. In 1905 Porlament passed the Aliens Act, with a view to restricting the entince of undesirable pauper immigrants, but the provisions of this statute are not difficult to evade and it is not unlikely that further legislation will be required to prevent this country from becoming the 'dumpin, ground of the outcass of other nations. 'Frigland for the Linglish' must be the rule of action.

A l'eiceless Pervilege

St Paul puded himself upon his Roman enhanding? But we have a verty greater heritage in our citizenship than had any Roman or Greak. The privilege of British citizenship is beyond all estimate. This bittle book will have failed in its purpose if it has not led you to this conclusion. With heartfulk thruks therefore, you should rejoice in the feet that you are British born, and her to such great triditions. It is for you to guard this inheritance reversally, and hand it forward to postenty unit paired. By to yourself as Browning did. Here and

^{# &}amp; Fd VIII a 13

^{*} Acts axt. 23 and axil 28.

here did England help me; how can I help England? Sav!"1

In the next chapter we will try to point out how each and all of you by loyal and efficient citizenship may help England. To belong to and have a share in the management of the Empire is a glorious right (and each citizen has this), but one also involving a heavy responsibility. The question is sometimes asked, "Of what use is

the Empire to us?" "Should we not be better off without India and the Colonics?" Such questions must be answered by others: "Of what value is any great trust or responsibility?" "Is it better to live a life of selfish ease or one of high and great endeavour?" We believe that we have a great mission to fulfil-to carry justice, knowledge, and peace into the dark places of the earth, and to lead less fortunate races into the ways of self-control, solf-reliance, and self-government. "The British Empire," said Lord Rosehery, "is the greatost secularinstrument for good." We have watched British law and liberty and British

institutions implanted in the Colonies, and they have proved ominently successful in promoting the happiness and welfare of the young nations owning allegiance to the British flag. It is because these rising peoples feel that their welfare is due to the possession of free institutions based upon popular sanction, that they remain loyal to the Motherland and to her ancient traditions. The principles of independence, justice, and self-control, which our earliest forefathers brought into England when, a millennium ago, they took possession of the country, are the causes of her present wide development, and of her stability as a world-power. Her children, trained at home in freedom and self-rale, have gone forth into the world strong and fearless, creating wherever they went a Greater Pritain in which they have reproduced the intends institutions of the old country, adopted to a different environment, but resting upon the self-some solid foundatives of they and liberts.

The question was taked in the early part of this chapter whether the British Empire was destined to melt away like its pred-cessors or whether it contained greater elements of permanence. If you have studied these chapters circluily you will be better able now to offer some reply to this so reching and very difficult question. A Gallie post named Ruthius came near to the true answer when he said. Quad regions mains tell quantiqued regions mercure which may be facily translated as follows. The extent of your rules is a less matter than your worthing a to rule.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCLASION AND RESEARCH

1 The Romans beasted that when yer they conquered they established the Pax Romans. Contrast this with the Pax Bestannica.

2 The British Lingue has been described as a "bose aggregation of autonomous sistes". If this be so what is it ensures of the Injerial bond? Is it anything more than a tie of an inment?

3 Some pertions of the Empire were obtained by discovery and settlement, some by conquest some by cos. ion, some by jurchase. Give instances of each,

1 Does Newfoundland form part of the Dominion of Canada, or Rhodesia part of the Union of South Africa! If not, can you say why not!

5 Discuss the removal of the Indian Capital from Cal-

6 How far should Western ideas of marriage he forced

upon the people of India who helieve in polygamy and in child-marriages?

- 7. The people of Natal wish to exclude Hindus. Do you recognise the incongruity of one set of British subjects excluding from their country another set of British subjects?
- 8. How would you provide for representation of the Colonies in an Imperial Parliament of the Empire? How should India be represented? Where should this Parliament meet? Could prominent Colonial Statesmen attend the Parliament of the Empire, and yet manage to lead their parties in the Colonial Parliaments?
- 9. Could or would the British Parliament be controlled in
- its foreign policy by the Parliament of the Empire?

 10. In a London Evening paper of 26th February, 1913, appeared an article under these headlines—"Boon to Aliena." British Citizenship for £3 a Head," pointing out that the fee psyable on naturalisation, formerly £5, had now been reduced to £3. In this connection, discuss whether naturalisation should be made easier and cheaper, or the reverse; also whether an alien should be allowed to adopt an English surreame.
 - 11. How should Empire Day be celebrated?
 - 12. How far have we secured an "Imperial Penny Post"?

CHAPTER AVIII

THE COMPLETE CITIZEN

THE YOUNG CITIZEN

Ann how you may ask, can hoss or girls begin their work as citizens? They are too voing to sit on Committees or to enter Connels or to undertake the daties which only

to enter Conneils or to undertake the daties which only older people with some experience of the world and its affairs, can properly perform Outo true. But it would be the most errorsous idea

to imagine that citizenship is only for "grown-ups". Let us see how young people can assist in working for their country's good authors for one moment neglecting their

school work, or the duties of the hone.

The very simple rules will suffee to guide every child into the paths of good entireaship.

They are —

Mone can live to himself alone.

Office life begins at home and in the school
We will examine these statements.

We will examine these statements.

Have you ever realised that encrything you do, every one of your actions affects rome one else for better or worse? No one—tre as he will—can except this unit eval.

werea? No one—tre as he will—can escape this uniterest law Scance talls us that the chattage of the times pubble alters the balance of the globe, and, in the same way, every one of your actions—oven the smallest—raiv

may, every one of your actions—even the smallest—may be attended with correquences mamersurably great. If

once you grasp this truth, you will realise that every

person in the State—however young, insignificant, or obscure be may be—exercises some influence upon those around him. His life and conduct are, therefore, of importance to his fellow-citizens. Your function may be likened perhaps to that of a cog on one of the wheels of some great piece of mechanism. The finest of watches is useless if even one of the little cogs is missing.

FORMATION OF CHARACTER

If you are well or ill, clean or dirty, brave and truthful or cowardly and false, thrifty or thriftiess, it is of consequence to somebady—to your parents, or your relations, or your teachers, or your friends. It is impossible to avoid the law that man cannot live to himself alone. Your life either helps forward, or drags down and injures other lives; and if you have any manliness or womanliness in your character, you will desire to help and assist, rather than to distress and injure other people.

The first steps, therefore, towards good citizenship, are plain to see. They lie in the formation of your character. To be clean, sober, diligent, honest, thritty, kind, well-mannered, brave, truthful, and self-reliant is not merely to be of good character. Such qualities are beneficial to your family, and family life lies at the root of our national life. The virtnes, therefore, that render their possessor a delightful friend, a faithful comrade, a trust-worthy servant, a loyal subject, and a kind master, are advantageous to the State.

We see, then, that civic life begins in the home and in the school—in the formation of character. Hard work at school, and considerate behaviour at home may not seem very high virtues to you, but they are the basis of all good citizeuship. The Romans knew this, and you may like to remember that "virtue" is a Latin word, whose meaning is best translated by the Fighish word "manhiness." "Virtue," or manhine-s of character, is the bedrock of all citizenship

Remember that the State is made up of individuals each of whom is a source either of strength or weakness. Each unit that contributes to the national efficiency is a welcome addition to the community whilst every one will fully to develop an average standard of efficiency is a finding and serious to his follows and very generally a burden to secret.

Roughly therefore we may class ourselves and every one of our associates either as also ig the "efficients," or among the non-of-cents, that is among those who tend to increase the common atock of wealth and happaness, or among those who draw upon and decrease it. Ask vourselves to which class you belong

The alle the dishancet the victors, the intemperate, the quarrelsome, the shiftless the spendilimit, and the uncleanty, belong to the latter class. They direct by their conduct and habits from the sum-total of the general welfare, and Iring misery and discomfort upon all with whom they come in contact

THE BODY THE TEXTLE OF THE MIND

The foundations of our health are faid when we are too young to take any part or interest in the process. The first year of life is the most difficult to survive. In some of our manufacturing towns the first rate a acing infants is terrible ligh, one called in two or six dying before it attends the first anniversity of its birthday. It is executed, therefore, for the State to convern itself with

256 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

questions of infant mortality, and with the care of the

body. You have learnt that the law new provides medical inspection of school children (see p. 183), and that voluntary Caro Committees (sec p. 189) charge themselves with the oversight of the health of the little ones who appear

neglected and underfed. When, however, a child attains to an age when it can begin to think for itself-and you who read these pages have arrived at that stage-there are many things which it can do to maintain a state of good health.

It is scarcely necessary to point out that good health ie the host of all possessions. No one-not even the richest-can be happy without good health. See to it,

therefore, that you use your body wisely and reverently. The body is the temple of the mind. Excesses of all kinds injure the body, and the mind is weakoned in consequence. The gluttonens, the intemperate, the ox-

cessive smoker, the self-indulgent, in short, all who abuse their bodily appetites and powers, are equally damaging their mental faculties. Keep your hody "fit" therefore by daily exercise; join heartily in the school games-if your strength permits-and develop your muscles as well as your brain. The world wants both, and there is nothing incompatible between physical provess and a high place in the class lists. Train yourself so that you gain command over your body, and not your body over vou. , A sound mind in a sound body was recognised by the old Greeks and Romans as a fundamental necessity of good citizenship. By a sound mind is meant a mind

well-trained, well-halanced, and well-informed.

SELY-I DUCATION

Do not think that your education is finished when you leave reheal. You will find that it is just beginning, and is never hinished. In these days of creamy schools polytechnics, technical classes, university into monlectures, free libraries museums justime gallenes, etc., there is no excuse for remaining ill informed or uncliquated.

Self-education is the best of all education. In your preparation for the battle of life and for the manifold duties of citizenship arm yourself with sound knowledge The uneducated—those who have never learnt "how to learn' -do not I now what a world of plessure and profit hes in these wide fields of knowledge open to all who care to wander therein Read all that opportsins to your trade or profession Ann at the highest technical efficiency in the work by which you earn your Livelihood But whatever else you read combine with it so no resding of history History is the only infallible guide to good entirenship. The past experience of humanity furnishes the best of all clues to future action. Do not begin your study of history with the Norman Conquest, but with quite recent events. Then work brokened to the earlier periods. History is not a dry study, though it is often taught in an uninteresting manner, and school examinations too often make it a more matter of names and dates

History is in result, a long thatling story which has the superlative ment of being true. You can absorb a great deal of history by reading the Reminiscences of Prographies of great men and women whilst much valuable instruction can be obtained from the best historical novels. 258 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP.

Master one subject thoroughly, so that you can speak upon it with authority. "Know everything of something and something of everything."

Hobbies

Boys and girls, and "grown-ups" too are all the better if they have a "hohhy." It may be music, or sketching, or science, or literature, or it may be carpenly or model-engineering, or again it may be the collecting of stamps or botanical specimens or insects. A hobby is a great resource, and if thoroughly and genuinely studied or practised, it affords a valuable form of self-training. There are many well-known business men who have become, and are looked up to as, high authorities upon geology, entomology, astronomy and other sciences, which they originally took up as hobbies. Others again are fine art connoisseurs, whilst not a few are splendid amateur musicians. In times of great mental stress, or business worry, many a strong intellect has been saved from despair by the possession of some resource in the shape of a "hobby."

" MANNERS MARTTH MAN"

Cultivate good manners in your relations with other people. It is no sign of manliness or of independence of character to be sharp, curt, or rudely-spoken in your conversation with others. Quite the contrary. It is a sign of ill-breeding, and of a lack of education. William of Wykeham founded his college at Winchester more than five hundred years ago, he gave to it the motto which stands at the head of this paragraph, "Manners makyth Man"—a motto which is borne to the present

day upon the cost of arms of this famous school. The pious and generous hearted femiler knew that gentleness, courtesy, and consideration for others, are among the choicest fruits of education, and that these virtues are the distinguishing qualities of a "gentle-man".

Good manners indeed are a truer test of mailiness than a low low-slent, and ancouth dements or. The man who under strong provocation can keep his tranners, restrain his temper, and check his tongue has already conquered a kingdom. He is of finer mettle and is more mainly than he who loses his self control and gives way to bluster and ritugeration.

Remember this when in after his you are drawn into political or religious controvers. No subjects arouse deeper feelings then questions of politics or religion. Ones is a free country in which every man is entitled to his own opinion, and he is at liberly to orce his viores upon others by reasoning and argument. No one is justified, however, in exceeding the limits set by good manners. If cool reasoning cannot turn a man to another way of thinking it is eartim that abusive epitheta will not do so. There is an old saying "It is cold steal that cuts,"—a maxim which you may recollect with advantage whenever you are about to entir into any controversy.

When dealing with the subject of manners as a necessary just of the equipment of the complete citizen, some inference must be made to the existence of a class of people—generally young and i, remain, and sometimes of existing the matter of the property intended for the use or pleasure of the public. Such area as damaging the trees or flowing plants, or seats, in public parks, throwing broken bottles on the leads, backing the

cushions in railway carriages; scribbling or scratching initials upon public monuments; defiling empty churches, and many other similar insensato or unclean deeds, betoken a diseased mind. Some form of sbarp and salutary discipline should be administered to those who thus grossly abuse property designed for common use and enjoyment.

We should each feel porsonally responsible for that which belongs to the community or for that which is placed at the disposal of the public for use or enjoyment. It behoves us, therefore, to constitute ourselves guardians of all forms of public property, whether in parks, museums, libraries, picture galleries, churches, or olse-

where.

COMPULSORY AND VOLUNTARY DUTIES

If you have carefully read the preceding chapters, you will bave learnt that a good citizen must not only know many things about the national institutions and the laws under which he lives, but be must also accept certain responsibilities and perform certain duties for tho benefit of the community as a whole. Some of these duties are compulsory, others are voluntary. The law, for instance, compels a man to pay his rates and taxes; to serve on juries; to clothe, educate, and vaccinate his children; to insure his servants; to register the birth and death of any member of his family; to keep his property in a sanitary condition; as well as sundry minor duties which you will discover for yourself when you acquire the full status of citizenship. In all other European countries a man must also undergo a rigorous military training, and qualify himself as an efficient soldier. In addition to these positive duties laid upon

the citizen 11 the law, he is also forbidden to do certain things, which though not morally wrong are nevertheless contrary to the interests of the people. Thus, for instance, no one may obstruct a highway by throwing down stones brief so refuse. The law also restrains a man from orders or relate the two tests restrains a min from unisance to his neighbours. He may not even plan a minimal instrument late at night if thereby he hinders the slicep of the people next door. The law, you see endeavours to keep people from behaving 11 a manner which adversely affects the life safety, health, or comfort of others. The ancient Romans who were great lawgivers, expressed this idea in their legal phrase ' bio utere tuo ut non abenum lacdas " which means " Uso what is yours so as not to injure ansone else ' And if you think of it this maxim is embodied in the Golden Rule, the central Trinciple of the Christian religion, "to do unto others as you would that they should do unto you." There is indeed no higher rule of citizenship than this all-embricing command. To be a law abiding person is excellent, but it is one

To be a law abusing person is excellent, but it is one sude only of good citizenship. The Complete Citizen is he who is ready and willing to und tracks some voluntary services for the good of his neighbours, in addition to the compulsory duties enforced by the law, services for which he med expect few or no thanks, and no recompresses save in the inward estisfaction of an honourable task faithfully accomplished. Most of you can do something to promote the general good even though you may be very young and still at school.

CITIZENS BUSY, SICK, OR AFATHETIC

We must recognise that some people have to work so long and so hard for a living, that they cannot find, strength or time for anything else. They are doing their part as citizons in tolling for their own support, and for that of their families. We cannot osk them to add to their arduous labours by engaging in any form of voluntary service.

There are those again who are hindered by sickness or .. disease from undertaking any sharo of the voluntary duties of citizenship. We should be reminded by their infirmities that much disease is due to damp, dark and insanitary houses, impure water and food, neglect of the elementary principles of health, etc .- all of which causes it will be the care of the citizens of the future to remove . from our midst. But whatever we may do to alleviate the sum-total of human suffering, there will always be poverty, disease, and misfortune. There will always, therefore, be scope for charitable work, and room for the display of love and sympathy to those who have fallen by the way. However good and wise our laws may be, they, can never take the place of that divine unselfishness which has been embedied for all time in the parable of the Good Samaritan.

Lastly, there are people too selfish or too idle or indifferent to make any personal effort in the way of social service, even though they have time and means at their disposal. The giving of money is a poor substitute for personal effort. Indeed, in many branches of social work such as attendance on Councils, Boards, Advisory and Care Committees, etc., it is sacrifice of time and shought that is wanted rather than gifts of money. The citizen who could engage in this work but declines because it would interfere with his pleasure or comfort, is not discharging his obligations to society by simply standing a chequo or a postal order for a sum which he may possibly not miss. Remember always that the Complete Citizen must be prepared to render social service in perion, and not by deputy, otherwise he is chirking his social obligations. Apathy and indifference to the calls of evice duty are inconsistent with good intracaship. Indeed, there can be no surer in he ition of national deep than the apathy or indifference of a people to their public interests.

Your DERT to YOUR COUNTRY

Obligations are debts, and we each ours a debt to our country. This debt we are bound in honour to repar To have been born a British child as a priceless privilege. No other nation confers so rich a heritage upon its children.

You must read in your histories of the long and painful struggles to secure the sprious freedom which you now enjoy, and which some of you in importance of its great worth perhaps esteem too lightly. Incident to worthin according to the dictates of conscience, freedom to epeck out one a thoughts upon political and religious platforms; the freedom of the press, the freedom of the ballot-box, freedom to move from town to town, and from England to the Colonics or abreved without interference, freedom from a long and ardunous militare service, retieve are only a few of the privileges which many other nations have still to secure for themselves

Then think of the many other burthrights of every Figlish child—the right to free education, the right of bring medically cared for when teo young to understand the importance of sound teeth, clear ejesight, and straight

limbs; the right to wholesome conditions of labour in the factories and mines; the right to be insured in after-years against sickness and accident and (in some trades) against unemployment, and against want in old age. Each decade sees a further addition to our privileges and rights, Advance is slow, hut sure. The ideal towards which we should strive is to secure to every honest and faithful worker in the community the right to a reasonable share of leisure, and of the wealth that he helps to produce, and a large share of health and happiness. There should beand if you all combine to work for it, there will be-no possibility in succeeding generations of a useful citizen having to live in degrading poverty. Meanwhile you are in debt to your country for the privileges and for the rights which you already enjoy. See that you discharge that obligation by some form of social service, whoreby the lot of others less fortunate may be brightened and bettered.

TORIET

It is the duty of every citizen to exert himself so as not to become a burden on others. Thrift is a means to this end, and should, therefore, be encouraged. The State offers many inducements to thrift. Through the Post Office a child may begin to save pence, and the Post Office Savings Bank offers a perfectly safe deposit for savings, which can always he withdrawn (at any Post Office in the Kingdom) in time of need. Through the Post Office also, a man may buy an annuity or invest his savings in securities like "Consols," etc., the interestingom which is guaranteed by the State. Thrift should nover be allowed to degenerate into miserliness—one of the most deplorable of vices.

WEALTH AND CITIZENSHIP

Some people there are unfortunately, who whilst our scious of nobles ends debt orately choose it of their aims of life and which every and any form of social service that involves a H-denil or a Measurine. This speed their days in the pursuit of all source. Such editions are far more dangeous to the base than the most format socialists. They consume but do not produce. The edition of the fature will certified have to justify in existence to some farm of work that tends to the general good—otherwise he will be held to forfar the respect and the protects not the community to whos welfare his life contributes nothing.

The possession of great wealth carries with it great power and therefore get it responsibilities. Unless this power is misely exercised and the responsibilities are duly discharged, there is a growing lealency to regard the owner of a vast fortune as an enemy of society. The millionaire with high it also of his stewardship who looks upon his wealth as a trust to be faithfully administreed, can be a blessing to the community in which he likes. On the other hand a Greasus who misuses his gives in sonse-less luxury is a curse to society. He dichases the whole tops of the national life.

It is son etimes imagined by those who have not studied political economy that a rich man is benefiting the community when he keeps dozwis of cervants and expends extraviorant sums in useless display. People are wint to say that he is circulat agriculty and thirely helping tribe. Nothing is further from the truth. A flow individuals may profit but the rich of society will be for money about its a spurious form of helping tribe. These things may now at fest seem elser to you.

266 A PRIMER OF ENGLISH CITIZENSHIP

They need close study for complete apprehension. Some maxims, however, you can remember, viz. "Want is not cured by Waste"; and that "One Worker is worth many Spendthriks." The following illustration may assist you to understand the matter.

If a millionaire were to give to every person in London a half-crown, he would be reduced to poverty, and you would find, a few days later, that all the half-crowns were spent, and that no one was any better off. If, however, he had spent the money in building factories, and in establishing a great industrial business employing thousands of people, each of these persons might have been jermanently enabled to earn a good wage, whilst the millionaire would at the same time be none the poorer. In circulating his money in that way he would be conferring real benefit upon the community, whereas in giving it away in charify he would have done no lasting good, but possibly come harm; for indiscriminate charity is the worst form of generosity. It tends to create paupers, rather than a class of steady self-reliant workers.

He, only, whether rich or poor, is a good citizen whose life's work is fraught with usefulness to the State. We do not mean by this that all our time and strength should be given to work among the poor and sick, or attendance on Councils and Committees. That would be a very one-sided view of citizenship. There is a vast amount of necessary work to be done in the world. The fields must be ploughed, the harvest gathered, sheep and cattle must be reared, railways must be constructed and worked, houses must be built, cloth must be woven, leather must be tanned, food must be cooked, the home must be tended, and the million wants of civilised life must be met by the organised activity of millions of workers. The humble ploughman who performs his duty efficiently and conducts

himself colorly and honestly, is an good a crim n as any in the land. His work is alreaded, necessary to so very, and though he may be a peor and uninstructed person icoked down upon by people who do not understand what crimentap m may he is worth more to the community than any aller, however rub or will-born. He person's site dignity of labour, for he is serving only a whilst configulation, the duty read, the common task."

Good citizenship do a not therefore depend upon the prenerson of wealth power of octal position. It is no realter of personal character and worth of faithful fullifier of data and of enlightened ideals of particular Integration we find the greatest toe of good citizenship, in I heation the greatest hoje. The wise saving of the old timely phile sopher Diogenes, who have nearly 2000 years ago, is as true to day as when it was uttered.

"The foundation of every state as the education of its routh."

QUISTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESERVED

- 1. Discus, the sayings—"The Price of Freedom is Freehall Vigilance," and "Fersonal Liberty is founded upon Morality and Education."
- 2 "Labarty of Speech," and "Laborty of the Press," are two of the great provileges of Bratuh conversing. Dust usuals in this connection between "hiberty" and "hierore".
- ? "Poverty is a remediable evil." If so describe some of the means by which in your opinion poverty might be alleviated or abeli hed.
- 1 It has been proposed by some relation to per a law inforcing a minimum wage of 30s for week for all workers. Discuss this proposal (1) as a trivially for poverty, (2) as highly to increase the number of incomployed.

Westminster Abbey just beyond. Nowhere in the world are more noble examples of architecture to be found than in this quarter of London—the capital of the Empire. Of the ancient Abbey and of the Houses of Parliament you; have probably seen many pictures, and you are thus familiar with their appearance, even though you may never have travelled to London. But the other handsome and massive buildings are new to you, and you may wonder what purpose they serve, and who are the people that use them. They are the Government Buildings which belong to the nation; that is to you and to mo, and to all of us. We ought to take an interest in them because they have been built at the expense of the nation, that is, out of the taxpayers' money. It is within those spacious offices that the actual work of the Government goes on. Hundreds of officials and clerks come there daily to carry out the duties allotted to each, One of the greatest of these buildings is called The Treasury, another the Foreign Office, another the War Office, another the Admiralty, another the Education Office, and so on,

E3

THE CIVIL SERVICE

. The officials who carry on the administrative work, and the vast army of clerks constitute what is called the Civil Service. They are chosen with great care, and usually obtain their posts by competition in the "Civil Service Examinations." They receive good pay, and at the end of their period of service (which, as a rule, terminates at the age of sixty) a pension. Naturally there is a keen competition for these posts, and many people are attracted into the civil service because of the certainty of retaining their situations so long as they conduct themselves bonourably and efficiently. In this

country we have a "permutent" civil service—that is, the civil servants when once appointed are unaffected by any change of Ministry. This Ministry according to a parties rise and fall. The civil servants remain. In America civil servants are appointed on political grounds, and are timined out of their offices when a change in the Government takes place. Their system is based upon the principle of the 'spoils to the victors. By us this is deemed not conducte to regular and efficient work, and we have therefore, adopted a system in which merit and efficiency rather than political opinions furnish the grounds for advancement.

QUESTIONS FOR DISCUSSION AND RESEATCH

- 1 Differentiate between the use of the word "minister" as a servant of religion and as a servant of the "title
- 2 Do you think it will ever be possible to arbitrate upon questions involving the national honour? Give reasons for your narwer
- 3 What are the advantages or otherwise of appointing civilage to the posts of I aret Lord of the Admiralty and Minister for Wart
 - 4 What is meant by the term "Cabinet Responsibility"!
- 5 How far is the Cabinet a recognised part of the Con-
- 6 Uses the names of the Vinisters at present holding the great Offices of State mentioned in this chapter
 - 7. Discuss the advantages of a permanent civil service
- 8 Give examples from everyday life of false economy, with a view to proving that what is most effect it is in the long run the clearest